To Face yᵉ Title. J. Clark sc.

Jan 1 1.20 ...

A NEW

VOYAGE

ROUND THE

WORLD,

BY A

COURSE never ſailed before.

BEING

A VOYAGE undertaken by ſome MERCHANTS, who afterwards propoſed the Setting up an *Eaſt-India* Company in FLANDERS.

Illuſtrated with COPPER PLATES.

LONDON:

Printed for A. BETTESWORTH, at the *Red-Lyon*, in *Pater-Noſter-Row*; and W. MEARS, at the *Lamb*, without *Temple-Bar*. M.DCC.XXV.

A NEW VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD.

IT has for ſome Ages been thought ſo wonderful a thing to ſail the Tour or Circle of the Globe, that when a Man has done this mighty Feat, he preſently thinks it deſerves to be recorded like Sir *Francis Drake*'s. So as ſoon as Men have acted the Sailor, they come a-ſhore and write Books of their Voyage, not only to make a great Noiſe of what they have done themſelves; but pretending to ſhow the way to others to come after them, they ſet up for Teachers and Chart Makers to Poſterity. Tho' moſt of them have had this Misfortune, that whatever Succeſs they have had in the Voyage, they have had very little in the Relation; except it be to tell us, that a Seaman when he comes to the Preſs, is pretty much out of his Element, and a very good Sailor may make but a very indifferent Author.

I do not in this, leſſen the Merit of thoſe Gentlemen who have made ſuch a long Voyage,as that round the Globe ; but I muſt be allow'd to ſay,as the way is now a common Road,the Reaſon of it thoroughly known, and the Occaſion of it more frequent than in former Times; ſo the World has done wondering at it; we no more look upon it as a mighty thing,a ſtrange and never heard of Undertaking; this cannot be now expected of us, the thing is made familiar, every ordinary Sailor is able to do it, if his Merchants are but qualified to furniſh him for ſo long a Voyage; and he that can carry a Ship to *Lisbon*, may with the ſame Eaſe carry it round the World.

Some tell us, it is enough to wonder at a thing nine Days, one would reaſonably then conclude, that it is enough that ſailing round the World has been wondered at above a Hundred Years: I ſhall therefore let the Reader know, that it is not the Rarity of going round the World that has occaſion'd this Publication, but if ſome Incidents have happened in ſuch a Voyage, as either have not happened to others, or as no other People, tho' performing the ſame Voyage, have taken notice of, then this Account may be worth publiſhing, tho' the thing, *viz.* The Voyage round the World, be in it ſelf of no Value.

It is to be obſerv'd, of the ſeveral Navigators whoſe Voyages round the World have been publiſh'd, that few, if any of them, have diverted us with that Variety which a Circle of that Length muſt needs offer. We have very little account of their Landings, their Diverſions, the Accidents which happen'd to them, or to others by their Means; the Stories of their Engagements, when they have had any Scuffle either with Natives, or *European* Enemies, are told ſuperficially and by

Halves;

Halves; the Storms and Difficulties at Sea or on Shore, have no where a full Relation; and all the reſt of their Accounts are generally fill'd up with Directions for Sailors coming that way, the Bearings of the Land, the Depth of the Channels, Entrances, and Barrs, at the ſeveral Ports, Anchorage in the Bays, and Creeks, and the like Things, uſeful indeed for Seamen going thither again, *and how few are they?* but not at all to the Purpoſe when we come expecting to find the Hiſtory of the Voyage.

Another ſort of theſe Writers have juſt given us their long Journals, tedious Accounts of their Log-work, how many Leagues they ſail'd every Day; where they had the Winds, when it blew hard, and when ſoftly; what Latitude in every Obſervation, what Meridian Diſtance, and what Variation of the Compaſs. Such is the Account of Sir *John Narbrough*'s Voyage to the *South Seas*, adorn'd with I know not how many Charts of the famous Streight of *Magellan*, a place only now famous for ſhowing the Ignorance of Sir *John Narbrough*, and a great many wiſe Gentlemen before him, and for being a Paſſage they had no need to have troubled themſelves with, and which no Body will ever go through any more.

Such alſo are the Voyages of Captain *John Wood*, to *Nova Zemla*, at the Charge of the Publick, in King *Charles* the IId's time; and *Martin Forbiſher* to the North Weſt Paſſages, in Queen *Elizabeth*'s time; all which, are indeed full of their own Journals, and the Incidents of ſailing, but have little or nothing of Story in them, for the uſe of ſuch Readers who never intend to go to Sea, and yet ſuch Readers may deſire to hear how it has far'd with thoſe that have, and how Affairs ſtand in thoſe remote Parts of the World.

For these Reasons, when first I set out upon a cruising and trading Voyage to the *East*, and resolv'd to go any where, and every where that the Advantage of Trade or the Hopes of Purchase should guide us, I also resolv'd to take such exact notice of every thing that past within my Reach, that I would be able, if I liv'd to come home, to give an Account of my Voyage, differing from all that I had ever seen before, in the nature of the Observations, as well as the manner of relating them: And as this is perfectly new in its Form, so I cannot doubt but it will be agreeable in the Particulars, seeing either no Voyage ever made before, had such Variety of Incidents happening in it, so useful and so diverting, or no Person that sail'd on those Voyages, has thought fit to publish them after this manner.

Having been fitted out in the River of *Thames* so lately as the Year 1713. and on a Design perhaps not very consistent with the Measures taking at that time for the putting an End to the War, I must be allowed to own I was at first oblig'd to act not in my own Name, but to put in a *French* Commander into the Ship, for the Reasons which follow, and which those who understand the manner of Trade upon closing the late War, I mean the Trade with *Spain*, will easily allow to be just and well grounded.

During the late War between *Great Britain* and her Confederates on one side, and the united Crowns of *France* and *Spain* on the other side, we all know the *French* had a free Trade into the *South Seas*; a Trade carried on with the greatest Advantage, and to the greatest Degree, that any particular Commerce has been carried on in the

World for many Ages paſt; inſomuch that we found the Return of Silver that came back to *France* by thoſe Ships, was not only the enriching of the Merchants of St. *Malo*, *Rochell*, and other Ports in *France*, ſome of whom we ſaw get immenſe Eſtates in a few Years, even to a Million *Sterling* a Man. But it was evident, the King of *France* himſelf was enabled by the Circulation of ſo much Bullion thro' his Mints,to carry on that War with very great Advantage.

It was juſt at the Cloſe of this War, when ſome Merchants of *London* looking with Envy on the Succeſs of that Trade, and how the *French*, notwithſtanding the Peace, would apparently carry it on, for ſome Years at leaſt, to infinite Advantage, began to conſider whether it might not be poſſible to come in for a Snack with *France*, as they were ally'd to *Spain*, and yet go abroad in the Nature of a private Cruiſer.

To bring this to paſs, it was thought proper in the firſt place, to get a Share, if poſſibe, in a new Deſign of an *Eaſt India* Trade in *Flanders*, juſt then intended to be ſet up by ſome *Britiſh* Merchants, by the Aſſiſtance of an Imperial Charter, or at leaſt under Colour of it; and ſo we might go to Sea in a threefold Capacity, to be made uſe of as Occaſion might preſent; *viz.* when on the Coaſt of *New Spain* we ſought to trade, we were *French* Men, had a *French* Captain, and a ſufficient Number of *French* Seamen, and *Flemiſh* or *Walloon* Seamen,who ſpoke *French*, ſo to appear on all proper Occaſions. When at Sea we met with any *Spaniſh* Ship worth our while, we were *Engliſh* Cruiſers, had Letters of Mart from *England*, had no Account of the Peace, and were fitted for the Attack. And when in the *Eaſt Indies* we had occaſion to trade, either at the

English or *Dutch* Settlements, we ſhould have Imperial Colours, and two *Flemiſh* Merchants at leaſt in Appearance, to tranſact every thing as we found Occaſion. However, this laſt part of our Project fail'd us, that Affair not being fully ripe.

As this myſterious Equipment may be liable to ſome Exceptions, and perhaps to ſome Enquiries, I ſhall for the preſent conceal my Name, and that of the Ship alſo: By Enquiries, I mean Enquiries of private Perſons concern'd; for as to publick Enquiries, we have no Uneaſineſs, having acted nothing in Contradiction to the Rules and Laws of our Country; but I ſay, as to private Perſons, it is thought fit to prevent their Enquiries, to which end, the Captain in whoſe Name I write this, gives me leave to make uſe of his Name, and conceal my own.

The Ship ſail'd from the River the 20th of *December* 1713. and went directly over to the Coaſt of *Flanders*, lying at an Anchor in *Newport Pitts*, as they are call'd, where we took in our *French* Captain *Jean Michael Mirlotte*, who with 32 *French* Seamen, came on board us in a large Snow from *Dunkirk*, bringing with them 122 ſmall Anchors or Rundlets of Brandy, and ſome Hampers and Casks of *French* Wine in Wicker'd Bottles: While we were here, we lay under *Engliſh* Colours, with Pendants flying, our Ship being upwards of 500 Tun, and had 46 Guns mounted, mann'd with 356 Men: We took the more Men on board becauſe we reſolv'd as Occaſion ſhould preſent, to fit our ſelves with another Ship, which we did not queſtion we ſhould meet with in the *South Seas*.

We had alſo a third Deſign in our Voyage, tho' it may be eſteem'd an Accident to the reſt, *viz.* We were reſolv'd to make ſome At-

tempts

tempts for new Diſcoveries,as Opportunity offer'd; and we had two Perſons on board who were exceedingly well qualified for our Direction in this part, all which was deriv'd from the following Occaſion;

The Perſon who was principally concern'd in the Adventure, was a Man not only of great Wealth, but of great Worth; he was particularly addicted to what we call New Diſcoveries, and it was indeed upon his Genius to ſuch Things, that the firſt Thought of the Voyage was founded: This Gentleman told us, that he had already ſent one Ship fully equipt and furniſh'd for a new Attempt, upon the *North Weſt* or *North Eaſt* Paſſages, which had been ſo often in vain tried by former Navigators; and that he did not queſtion the Succeſs, becauſe he had directed them by new Meaſures, and to ſteer a Courſe that was never attempted yet; and his Deſign in our Voyage was to make like Diſcoveries towards the *South* Pole; where, as he ſaid, and gave us very good Reaſons for it, he did not doubt but we might diſcover even to the Pole it ſelf, and find out New Worlds and new Seas, which had never been heard of before.

With theſe Deſigns, this Gentleman came into the other part of our Project, and contributed the more largely, and with the more Freedom, to the whole, upon that Account; in particular, all the needful Preparations for ſuch Diſcoveries, were made wholly at his Expence, which I take Notice of here, as being moſt proper in the Beginning of our Story, and that the Reader may the leſs wonder at the odd way we took to perform a Voyage which might with much more Eaſe have been done by the uſual and ordinary way.

We ſail'd from the Coaſt of *Flanders* the ſecond of *January*, and without any extraordinary Incident made the Coaſt of *Galloway* in *Ireland* the tenth, where we ſtay'd and took in a very extraordinary Store of Proviſions, three times as much as uſual; the Beef being alſo well pickled or double pack'd, that we might have a ſufficient Reſerve for the Length of our Voyage, reſolving alſo to ſpare it as much as poſſible.

We had a very rich Cargo on board, conſiſting of all ſorts of *Britiſh* Manufactures ſuitable for the *Spaniſh* Trade in their *Weſt Indies*; and as we aim'd at nothing of Trade till we came to the *Spaniſh* Coaſt, we ſail'd directly for the *Canary* Iſlands; having not fully reſolv'd whether we would make our Voyage to the *South Seas* firſt, and ſo round the Globe by the *Eaſt Indies*, as has been the ordinary way, or whether we would go firſt by the *Eaſt Indies*, and upon the Diſcoveries we were directed to, and then croſs the great *Pacifick* Ocean to the *Weſt* Coaſt of *America*, as was at laſt reſolv'd.

We made the *Canaries* the eleventh of *February*, and coming to an Anchor there to take in ſome freſh Water, we put out *French* Colours, and ſent our Boat on Shore, with a *French* Boatſwain and all *French* Seamen, to buy what we wanted: They brought us on board five Butts or Pipes of Wine, and ſome Proviſions, and having fill'd our Water, we ſet Sail again the thirteenth: In this time we call'd a Council among our ſelves, by which way we ſhould go as above.

I confeſs, I was for going by the Cape of *Good Hope* firſt, and ſo to the *Eaſt Indies*, then keeping to the *South* of *Java*, go away to the *Moluccoes*, where I made no doubt to make ſome Purchaſe among the *Dutch* Spice Iſlands, and ſo go away

to

to the *Philippines*; but the whole Ships Company, I mean of Officers, were againſt me in this Scheme, altho' I told them plainly that the Diſcoveries which would be made in ſuch a Voyage as that, were the principal Reaſons why our chief Owner embark'd in the Adventure, and that we ought to regard the End and Deſign of our Voyage; that it would certainly in the Cloſe of things amount to the ſame, as to Trade, as if we went the uſual way, ſeeing the Places we were to go to, were the ſame one way as the other, and it was only putting the Queſtion which we ſhould go to firſt; that all the Navigators on ſuch Voyages as theſe, went by the *South Seas* firſt, which would be no Honour to us at all; but if we went by the *Eaſt Indies* firſt, we ſhould be the firſt that ever went ſuch a Voyage, and that we might make many uſeful Diſcoveries and Experiments in trying that Courſe; that it would be worth our while, not only to go that way, but to have all the World take notice of it, and of us for it.

I uſed a great many Arguments of the like Nature, but they anſwer'd me moſt effectually, with laying before me the Difficulties of the Voyage, and the contrary Methods of Trade, which, in a Word, made the going that way impracticable: Firſt, the Difficulty of the Voyage, over the vaſt Ocean call'd the *Pacifick Sea*, or *South Sea*, which, if we kept a *Southern* Latitude, and took the variable Winds as we ſhould find them, as I propos'd to do, might very well be a Voyage of ſix or eight Months, without any ſight of Land, or ſupply of Proviſions or Water, which was intolerable; that as to Trade, it was prepoſterous, and juſt ſetting the Voyage with the Bottom upward; for as we were loaden with Goods, and had no Money, our firſt Buſineſs was to go to the

South

South Seas, where our Goods were wanted, and would ſell for Money, and then to the *Eaſt Indies*, where our Money would be wanting, to buy other Goods to carry home, and not to go to the *Eaſt Indies* firſt, where our Goods would not ſell, and where we could buy no other for want of Money.

This was ſo ſtrong a way of reaſoning, that they were all againſt me, as well *French* as *Engliſh*, and even the two Agents for Diſcoveries, ſubmitted to it; and ſo we reſolv'd to ſtand away from the *Canaries*, to the Coaſt of *Braſil*, thence upon the *Eaſtern* Coaſt of *South America* to Cape *Horn*, and then into the *South Seas*; and if we met with any thing that was *Spaniſh* by the way, we reſolv'd to make Prize of it, as in a time of War.

Accordingly we made the Coaſt of *Braſil* in about twenty ſix Days, from the *Canary* Iſlands, and went on Shore at Cape St. *Auguſtine*, for freſh Water, afterwards we put into the Bay of *All Saints*, got ſome freſh Proviſions there, and about an Hundred very good Hogs, ſome of which we kill'd and pickled up their Fleſh, and carried the reſt on board alive, having taken on board a great Quantity of Roots, and *Maiz*, or *Indian* Corn, for their Food, which they thriv'd on very well.

It was the laſt of *March* when we came to the Bay, and having ſtay'd there fourteen Days, to furniſh our ſelves with all Things we wanted, we got Intelligence there, that there were three Ships at the *Buenos Ayres*, in the *Rio de la Plata*, which were preparing to go for *Europe*, and that they expected two *Spaniſh* Men of War to be their Convoy, becauſe of the *Portugueſe* Men of War which were in *Braſil*, to Convoy the *Braſil* Fleet.

Their

Their having two *Spanish* Men of War with them for their Convoy, took away a great deal from the Joy we had entertain'd at the News of their being there, and we began to think we should make little or nothing of it: However, we resolv'd to see the utmost of it, and particularly if our double Appearance would not now stand us in some stead.

Accordingly we went away for the River of *Plate*, and as usual, spreading *French* Colours, we went boldly up to *Buenos Ayres*, and sent in our Boat, mann'd with *French* Men, pretending to be homeward bound from the *South Seas* and in want of Provisions. The *Spaniards* receiv'd us with Civility enough, and granted us such Provisions as we wanted; and here we found, to our great Satisfaction, that there was no such thing as any *Spanish* Man of War there; but they said they expected one, and the Governor there for the King of *Spain* asked our *French* Officer if we would take one of their Ships under our Convoy; Monsieur *Mirlotte* answer'd him warily, that his Ship was deep loaden, and foul, and he could not undertake any thing, but if they would keep him Company, he would do them what Service he could; but that also, as they were a rich Ship, they did not design to go directly to *France*, but to *Martinico*, where they expected to meet with some *French* Men of War to Convoy them home. This Answer was so well manag'd, tho' there was not one Word of Truth in it, that one of the three Ships, for the other two were not ready, resolv'd to come away with us, and, in an evil Hour for them, they did so.

To be short, we took the innocent *Spaniard* into our Convoy, and sail'd away to the *Northward* with them, but were not far at Sea, before we let

let them know what Circumſtances they were in, by the following Method: We were about half a League a Head of them, when our Captain bringing too,and haling up our Courſes, made a Signal to the *Spaniards* for the Captain to come on board, which he very readily did; as ſoon as he was on board, our Captain let him know that he was our Priſoner, and all his Men, and immediately manning their Boat with thirty of our own Men, we ſent them on board their Ship, to take Poſſeſſion of her, but order'd them that they ſhould behave civilly to the Men on board, and plunder nothing: For we made a Promiſe to the *Spaniſh* Captain, that his Ship ſhould not be plunder'd, upon Condition he would give us a juſt Account of his loading, and deliver peaceably to us what Riches he had on board; then we alſo agreed, that we would reſtore him his Ship, which by the way we found was chiefly loaden with Hides, Things of no Value to us, and that the Ship alſo, was an old Veſſel, ſtrong, but often doubled, and therefore a very heavy ſailer, and conſequently not at all fit for our purpoſe, tho' we greatly wanted a Ship to take along with us, we having both too many Men, and being too full of Goods, as I have ſaid above.

The *Spaniſh* Captain, tho' ſurpriz'd with the Stratagem that had brought him thus into the Hands of his Enemies, and greatly enrag'd in his Mind at being circumvented, and trapann'd out of his Ship, yet ſhew'd a great Preſence of Mind under his Misfortune; and, as I verily believe, he would have fought us very bravely, if we had let him know fairly what we were, ſo he did not at all appear dejected at his Diſaſter, but capitulated with us as if he had been talking Sword in Hand. And one time when

when our Captain and he could not agree, and the *Spanish* Captain was a little threatned, he grew warm; told the Captain that he might be ill us'd, being in his Hands, but that he was not afraid to suffer whatever his ill Fortune had prepar'd for him, and he would not, for fear of ill Usage, yield to base Conditions; that he was a Man of Honour, and if he (our Captain) was so too, he demanded to be put on board his own Ship again, and he should see he knew how to behave himself. Our Captain smil'd at that, and told him, he was not afraid to put him on board his own Ship and fight for her again, and that if he did so, he was sure he could not escape him; the *Spanish* Captain smil'd too, and told him he should see (if he did) that he knew the way to Heaven from the Bottom of the Sea, as well as any other Road, and that Men of Courage were never at a loss to conquer their Enemy one way or other; intimating, that he would sink by his Side rather than be taken, and that he would take care to be but a very indifferent Prize to him, if he was conquered.

However, we came to better Terms with him afterward; and in short, having taken on board all the Silver, which was about 200000 Pieces of Eight, and whatever else we met with that was valuable, among the rest, his Ammunition, and six Brass Guns. We perform'd Conditions, and sent him into the *Rio de la Plata* again with his Ship, to let the other *Spanish* Captains know what scouring they had escaped.

We got a good Booty here indeed, but were disappointed of a Ship; however, we were not so sensible of that Disappointment now, as we were afterwards: For as we depended upon going to the *South Seas*, we made no doubt of meet-

ing

ing with Veſſels enough for our purpoſe; what followed, we ſhall ſoon ſee.

We had done our Work here, and had neither any Occaſion or any Deſire to lie any longer on this Coaſt, where the Climate was bad, and the Weather exceeding hot, and where our Men began to be very uneaſy, being crowded together ſo cloſe all in one Ship; ſo we made the beſt of our way *South*.

We met with ſome ſtormy Weather in theſe Seas, and particularly a *North Weſt* Blaſt, which carried us for eleven Days, or thereabouts, a great way off to Sea: But as we had Sea Room enough, and a ſtout ſtrong built Ship under us, perfectly well prepar'd, tite and firm, we made light of the Storms we met with, and ſoon came into our Voyages way again; ſo that about the fourth of *May* we made Land in the Latitude of 45 Degrees 12 Minutes *South*.

We put in here for freſh Water, and finding nothing of the Land mark'd in our Charts, we had no knowledge of the place, but coming to an Anchor at about a League from the Shore, our Boat went in queſt of a good watering place; in purſuit of this, they went up a Creek about two Leagues more, where they found good Water, and fill'd ſome Casks, and ſo came on Board to make their Report.

The next Day we came into the Creeks Mouth where we found ſix to eight Fathom Water within Cables Length of the Shore, and found freſh Water enough, but no People or Cattle, tho' an excellent Country for both.

Of this Country, I made many Obſervations, ſuitable to the Deſign and Deſire of our ingenious Imployer and Owner, and which are one end of publiſhing this Voyage: I ſhall mention only

only one here, becauſe I ſhall come to ſpeak it again on another Occaſion more largely. My Obſervation here, is as follows:

An Obſervation concerning the Soil and Climate of the Continent of America, South *of the River* De la Plata; *and how ſuitable to the Genius, the Conſtitution, and the Manner of living of* Engliſhmen, *and conſequently for an* Engliſh *Colony.*

THE particular Spot which I obſerve upon, is that part of the Continent of *America* which lies on the Shore of the *North Seas*, as they are call'd, tho' falſly; for they are more properly the *Eaſt Seas*, being extended along the *Eaſt* Shores of *South America*. The Land lies on the ſame *Eaſt* ſide of *America*, extended *North* and *South* from *Coaſta Deſerta*, in 42 Degrees, to Port St. *Julian*, in 49 Degrees and a half, being almoſt 500 Miles in Length, full of very good Harbours, and ſome navigable Rivers; the Land is a Plain for ſeveral Scores of Miles within the Shore; with ſeveral little riſing Hills, but no where mountainous or ſtony; well adapted for encloſing, feeding, and grazing of Cattle; alſo for Corn, all ſorts of which would certainly not only grow, but thrive very well here; eſpecially Wheat, Rye, Peaſe, and Barley, Things which would ſoon be improv'd by *Engliſhmen*, to the making the Country rich and populous, the raiſing great Quantities of Grain of all Sorts, and Cattle in Proportion. The Trade which I propoſe for the Conſumtion of all the Produce, and the

the place whither to be carried, I refer to ſpeak of by it ſelf, in the further Purſuit of this Work.

I return now to the Purſuit of our Voyage. We put to Sea again the tenth of *May*, with fair Weather and a fair Wind ; tho' a Seaſon of the Year, 'tis true, when we might have Reaſon to expect ſome Storms, being what we might call the Depth of their Winter. However, the Winds held *Northerly*, which there are to be eſteem'd the warm Winds, and bringing mild Weather ; and ſo they did till we came into the Latitude of 50 Degrees, when we had ſtrong Winds and ſqualy Weather, with much Snow and Cold, from the *S. W.* and *S. W.* by *W.* which blowing very hard; we put back to Port St. *Julian*, where we were not able to ſtir for ſome time.

We weigh'd again the 29th and ſtood *South* again paſt the Mouth of the Streights of *Magellan*, a Streight famous for many Years, for being thought to be the only Paſſage out of the *North Seas* into the *South Seas*, and therefore I ſay famous ſome Ages ; not only in the Diſcovery of it by *Magellan*, a *Spaniſh* Captain, but of ſuch Significance, that for many Years it was counted a great Exploit to paſs this Streight, and few have ever done it of our Nation but that they have thought fit to tell the World of it, as an extraordinary Buſineſs, fit to be made publick as an Honour to their Names. Nay King *Charles* the IId thought it worth while to ſend Sir *John Narbrough* on purpoſe to paſs and take an exact Survey of this Streight, and the Map or Plan of it has been publiſh'd by Sir *John* himſelf, at the publick Expence, as a uſeful thing.

Such a mighty and valuable thing alſo was the paſſing this Straight, that Sir *Francis Drake*'s going thro' it, gave birth to that famous old Wives

Wives Saying, *viz.* That *Sir* Francis Drake *ſhot the Gulph*; a Saying that was current in *England* for many Years, I believe near a Hundred after Sir *Francis Drake* was gone his long Journey *of all*; as if there had been but one Gulph in the World, and that paſſing it had been a Wonder next to that of *Hercules* cleanſing the *Egean* Stable.

Of this famous place I could not but obſerve on this Occaſion, that as Ignorance gave it its firſt Fame, and made it for ſo many Ages the moſt eminent part of the Globe, as it was the only Paſſage by which the whole World could be ſurrounded, and that it was every Man's Honour that had paſs'd it, as above; ſo now it is come to the full End or Period of its Fame, and will in all Probability never have the Honour to have any Ship, Veſſel, or Boat, go through it more, while the World remains, unleſs (which is very improbable) that part of the World ſhould come to be fully inhabited. I know ſome are of Opinion, that before the full Period of the Earth's Exiſtence, all the remoteſt and moſt barren Parts of it ſhall be peopled; but I ſee no Ground for ſuch a Notion, but many Reaſons which would make it appear to be impracticable, and indeed impoſſible; unleſs it ſhould pleaſe God to alter the Situation of the Globe as it reſpects the Sun, and place it in a direct, as it now moves in an oblique Poſition; or that a new Species of Mankind ſhould be produced, who might be as well qualified to live in the Frozen Zone, as we are in the Temperate, and upon whom the Extremity of Cold could have no Power. I ſay, as there are ſeveral Parts of the Globe where this would be impracticable, I ſhall ſay no more than this, that I think 'tis a groundleſs Suggeſtion.

But to return to our Voyage; we paſs'd by the Mouth of this famous Streight *De Magellan*, and thoſe others which were paſs'd thro' by *Le Maire* the *Dutch* Man afterwards; and keeping an offing of ſix or ſeven Leagues, went away *South*, till we came into the Latitude of 58. when we would, as we had tried three Days before, have ſtretched away *South West*, to have got into the *South Seas*, but a ſtrong Gale of Wind took us at *W. N. W.* and tho' we could (lying near to it) ſtretch away to the *Southward*, yet as it overblow'd, we could make no *Weſtward* way; and tho' we had under us an excellent ſtrong built Veſſel, that valued not the Waves, and made very good work of it, yet we went away to Leeward in ſpight of all we could do, and loſt Ground amain. We held it out however, the Weather being clear, but exceſſive cold, till we found our ſelves in the Latitude of 64.

We call'd our Council ſeveral times, to conſider what we ſhould do, for we did but drive to Leeward; the longer we ſtrove with it, the Gale held ſtill, and to our Apprehenſions it was ſet in; blowing like a kind of *Monſon*, or *Trade Wind*, tho' in thoſe Latitudes I know there is no ſuch thing properly call'd, as a *Trade Wind*.

We tried (the Wind abating) to beat up again to the *North*, and we did ſo; but it was by running a great way to the *East*; and once I believe we were in the Longitude of St. *Helena*, tho' ſo far *South*, but it coſt us infinite Labour, and near ſix Weeks time,at length we made the Coaſt, and arrived again at the Port of St. *Julian* the 20th of *June*, which, by the way, is the Depth of their Winter.

Here we reſolv'd to lay up for the Winter, and not attempt to go ſo far *South* again at that time

time of Year, but our eager Defire of purfuing our Voyage prevail'd, and we put out to Sea again, having taken in frefh Provifions, fuch as are to be had there; that is to fay, Seals, Penguines, and fuch like Trade, and with this Recruit we put to Sea, I fay, a fecond time.

We had this time worfe Luck than we had before, for the Wind fetting in at *South Weft*, blew a Storm, and drove us with fuch Force away to Sea *Eaftward*, that we were never able to make any way to the *Southward* at all, but were carried away with a continued Storm of Wind, from the fame Corner, or near it, our Pilot, or Mafter, as we call'd him, finding himfelf often obliged to go away before it, and it kept us out fo long at Sea, and we were gone fo far to the *North Eaft*, *Eaftward*, that he advifed us to ftand away for the Cape of *Good Hope*; and accordingly we did fo, and arriv'd at the Cape the laft Day of *July*. We were now dead hearted indeed, and I began to revive my Propofal of going to the *Eaft Indies*, as I had at firft intended; and to anfwer the Objection which they made againft it, as being againft the Nature of Trade, and that we had nothing on board but *European* Goods, which were not fitted for the *Eaft Indies*, where Money only was fuitable to the Market we were to make. I fay to anfwer this Objection, I told them I would engage that I would fell our whole Cargo at the *Phillipine* Iflands, as well as on the Coaft of *America*; for that thofe Iflands being *Spanifh*, our Difguife of being *French* would ferve us as well at the *Phillipines*, as it would in *New Spain*; and with this particular Advantage, that we fhould fell here for four times the Value as we fhould on the Coaft of *Chili*, or *Peru*; and that when we had done, we

could load our Ship again there, or in other Places in the *Indies*, with ſuch Goods as would come to a good Market again in *New Spain*.

This I told them was indeed what had not been practis'd, nor at any other time would it be practicable: For as it was not uſual for any Ships to go from the *Eaſt Indies* to the *Phillipines*, ſo neither was it uſual for any *European* Ships to trade with Freedom to the *South Seas*, till ſince the late War, when the *French* had the Priviledge: and I could not but be amaz'd that the *French* had never gone this way, where they might have made three or four Voyages in one, and with much leſs Hazard of meeting with the *Engliſh* or *Dutch* Cruiſers; and have made twice the Profits which they made the other way, where they were frequently out three or four Years upon one Return; whereas here they might make no leſs than three Returns, or perhaps four, in the ſame Voyage, and in much leſs time.

They were now a little ſurprized, for in all our firſt Debates we had nothing of this Matter brought in Queſtion; only they entertain'd a Notion that I was going upon ſtrange Projects, to make Diſcoveries, ſearch for the *South* Pole, plant new Colonies, and I know not how many Whims of their own, which were neither in my Deſign, or in my Inſtructions. The Perſon therefore who was our *Supra Cargo*, and the other Captain whoſe Name I have not mentioned, together with the *French* Captain *Mirlotte*, and the reſt who had all oppos'd me before, came chearfully into my Propoſal, only the *Supra Cargo* told me in the Name of the reſt, that he began to be more ſenſible of the Advantages of the Voyage I had propos'd, than he was before; but that as he was entruſted, together with me, in the Government

ment of the trading part, for I was empower'd equally with him too, he begg'd I would not take it ill, that he desir'd I would let him farther into that Particular, and explain my self at least as far as I thought fit.

This was so just a Request, and so easy for me to do, and above all, was made with so much good Manners and Courtesy, that I told him, if I had been otherwise determin'd, the courteous and good humour'd way, with which he requir'd it, would constrain me to it; but that however I was very ready to do it, as he was entrusted with the Cargo equally with me, and that it was a piece of Justice to the Owners, that who they thought fit to trust, I should trust also; upon this I told him. My Scheme was as follows:

First, I told him, that as the *Phillipine* Islands receiv'd all their *European* Goods from *Acapulco* in *America* by the King of *Spain*'s Ships, they were oblig'd to give what Price was imposed upon them by the Merchants, who brought those Goods by so many Stages to *Acapulco*. For Example; the *European* Goods, or suppose *English* Goods in particular, with which they were loaden, went first from *England* to *Cadiz*, from *Cadiz* by the Galloons to *Porto Belo*, from *Porto Belo* to *Panama*, from *Panama* to *Acapulco*; in all which Places, the Merchants had their several Commissions and other Profits upon the Sale; besides the extravagant Charges of so many several ways of Carriage, some by Water, some by Land, and besides the King's Customs in all those Places; and that after all this, they were brought by Sea from *Acapulco* to the *Phillipine* Islands, which was a prodigious Voyage, and were then generally sold in the *Phillippine* Islands at three Hundred *per Cent*. advance.

That in the Room of all this, our Cargo being well bought and well ſorted, would come to the *Phillippine* Iſlands at once, without any landing or relanding, and without any of all the Additions of Charge to the firſt Coſt, as thoſe by the way of *New Spain* had upon them; ſo that if we were to ſell them at the *Philippine* Iſlands a Hundred *per Cent.* cheaper than the *Spaniards* uſually ſold, yet we ſhould get abundantly more than we could on the Coaſt of *Peru*, tho' we had been allow'd a free Trade there.

That there was but two Objections to this Advantage, and theſe were, our Liberty of trading, and whether the place would conſume the Quantity of Goods we had: And to this I had much to anſwer; Firſt, That it was well known at the *Phillippine* Iſles, that the Kings of *France* and *Spain* were united firmly together; that the King of *Spain* had allowed the King of *France*'s Subjects a free Trade in his *American* Dominions, and conſequently that it would not be denied there; but on the other hand, that if it was deny'd by the Governor, yet there would be room to find out a Trade with the Inhabitants, and eſpecially with the *Chineſe* and *Japan* Merchants, who were always there, which Trade, the Governor could not prevent; and thus we could not fear a Market for all our Cargo, if it was much greater than it was.

That as to the Returns, we had the Advantage either way: For Firſt, We ſhould be ſure to receive a great part of the Price of our Goods in *Chineſe* or *Japan* Gold and Silver, or in Pieces of Eight; or if we thought fit to trade another way, we might take on board ſuch a Quantity of *China* Damasks, and other wrought Silks, Muſlins, and Chints, *China* Ware, and *Japan* Ware;

Ware; all which, would be immediately ſold in *America*; that we ſhould carry a Cargo of theſe Goods to *New Spain*, infinitely to our Advantage, being the ſame Cargo which the four great *Acapulco* Ships carry back with them every Year:. That when we had gone to the *South Seas* with this Cargo, of which we knew we ſhould make a good Market, we had nothing to do but to come back, if we thought fit, to the *Eaſt Indies* again, where we might load for *England* or *Flanders*, ſuch Goods as we thought proper; or if we did not think fit to take ſo great a Run, we might go away to the *South*, and round by Cape *Horn* into the *Atlantick* Ocean, and perfect thoſe Diſcoveries, which we made part of, in the beginning of our Voyage.

This was ſo clear a Scheme of Trade, that he ſeem'd ſurpriz'd with it, and fully ſatisfied in every part of it. But the Captain then objected againſt the Length of the Voyage to the *South Seas* from the *Phillipines*, and rais'd ſeveral Scruples about the Latitude which we ſhould keep in ſuch a Voyage; that we ſhould not be able to carry any Proviſions which we could take on board in thoſe hot Countries, that would keep for ſo long a Run, and ſeveral other Difficulties; to all which, I made anſwer, that when we had ſold our Cargo at the *Phillipines*, and found our Advantages there to anſwer our Deſires, I would not oppoſe our returning from thence directly to *England*, if they found it needful; or if they thought a farther Adventure would not anſwer the Riſques we were to expect in it; and that we would never have any Diſpute about that.

This ſatisfied them fully, and they went immediately with the News to the Men, as what they thought would pleaſe them wonderfully,

ſeeing they were mighty uneaſy but two or three Days before, about their being to go back again to the *South* of *America*, and the Latitude of 64, where we had not only been twice driven back, as if Heaven had forbidden us to paſs that way, but had been driven ſo far to the *South*, that we had met with a moſt ſevere Cold, and which pinched our Men exceedingly, who being come, as we might ſay, a hot Weather Voyage, were but ill furniſh'd for the Weather uſual in the Latitudes of 64.

But we had a harder Task to go through than we expected, upon this Occaſion; and it may ſtand here upon Record, as a Buoy or Beacon to warn Officers and Commanders of Ships, *Supra Cargoes*, and ſuch as are truſted in the Conduct of the Voyage, never to have any Diſputes among themſelves (I ſay not among themſelves) about the Courſe they ſhall take, or whither they ſhall go; for it never fails to come among the Men after them, and if once the Debate is but named on the out-ſide of the Great Cabin Door, it becomes immediately a Diſpute among the Officers upon the Quarter Deck, the Lieutenants, Mates, Purſer, *&c.* from thence it gets afore the Maſt, and into the Cook Room, and the whole Ship is immediately divided into Factions and Parties; every Foremaſt Man is a Captain, or a Director to the Captain; every Boatſwain, Gunner, Carpenter, Cockſwain, nay, and even the Cook, ſets up for a Leader of the Men; and if two of them join Parties, 'tis ten to one but it comes to a Mutiny, and perhaps to one of the two laſt Extremes of all Mutinies, *viz.* running away from the Ship, or running away with the Ship.

Our Caſe was exactly thus, and had iſſued accordingly for ought I know, if we had not been

in a Port, where we got immediate Aſſiſtance, and that by a more than ordinary Vigor in the Management too.

I have mentioned the firſt time when we call'd a Council about our Voyage at the *Canaries*, and how it was carried againſt my Opinion not to go to the *Eaſt Indies*, but to go to the *South Seas*, about by Cape *Horn*: As the Debate of this was not at all conceal'd, the Officers of the Ship, *viz.* the two Lieutenants and two Mates, the Purſer, and others, came in, and went out, and not only heard all we ſaid, but talk'd of it at Liberty on the Quarter Deck, and where they pleas'd, till it went among the whole Ship's Crew. It is true, there came nothing of all this at that time, becauſe almoſt all the Votes being againſt my Opinion, as I have ſaid already, the Ship's Company ſeem'd to join in naturally with it, and the Men were ſo talk'd into the great Proſpects of Gain to themſelves, by a Voyage to the *South Seas*, that they look'd upon me, who at the Bottom had the chief Direction of Things, to be no body, and to have only made a ridiculous Propoſal, which was againſt all their Intereſt; and I perceiv'd clearly after this, that they look'd upon me with an evil Eye, as one that was againſt their Intereſt; Nay and treated me with a ſort of Contempt too, as one that had no Power to hurt them, but as one, that if Things were left to me, would carry them on a Wild Gooſe Chaſe they knew not whither.

I took no Notice of this at firſt, knowing that in the Proceſs of Things I ſhould have Opportunity enough to let them know I had Power to oblige them many ways; as alſo, that I had Authority ſufficient to command the whole Ship, and that the Direction of the Voyage was prin-

cipally in me, tho' I being willing to do every thing friendly, had too eaſily, and I may ſay, too fooliſhly, put that to the Vote, which I had a right to have commanded their Compliance with. The ill Conſequences of which, appear'd not, for ſome time, but broke out upon the Occaſion of our new Meaſures, as you ſhall hear.

As ſoon as we had determin'd, *as you have heard*, our Voyage among our ſelves, in the great Cabbin, the *Supra Cargo* and Captain *Mirlotte*, as above, went out upon the Quarter Deck, and began to talk of it among the Officers, Midſhipmen, *&c.* and to give them their Due, they talk'd of it very honeſtly, not with any Complaint of being over-rul'd, or over-perſwaded, or the like, but as a thing that was fully agreed to among us in the great Cabbin.

The Boatſwain, a blunt, ſurly, bold Fellow, as ſoon as he heard of it, *very well, ſays he*, ſo we are all come back into Captain------'s blind Propoſal; why this is the ſame that every body rejected at the *Canaries*; and now becauſe we are driven hither by contrary Winds, thoſe Winds muſt be a Reaſon why we muſt undertake a prepoſterous, ridiculous Voyage, that never any Sailor would have propos'd, and that Man never went before. What does Captain --------- think that we can't find our way to the Coaſt of *America* again? and becauſe we have met with croſs Winds, we muſt never meet with fair ones? I warrant him, let us but go up the Height of St. *Helena*, we will ſoon reach the *Rio de la Plata* and Port St. *Julian* again, and get into the *South Seas* too, as others have done before us.

The Gunner took it from the Boatſwain, and he talks with one of the Midſhip Men in the ſame Dialect. For my part, ſays he, I ſhipt my ſelf for

for the *South Seas* when I firſt came a board the Ship, and in hopes of good Booty, and if we go thither, I know nothing can hinder us, Wind and Weather permitting: But this is ſuch a Voyage, as no Man ever attempted before; and whatever he propoſes can have nothing in it for the Men, but horrid Fateague, violent Heats, Sickneſs, and ſtarving.

One of the Mates takes it from him, and he ſays as openly, I wonder what *a Plague* the reſt of the Gentlemen mean, they were all againſt Captain ------- when he ſtarted this whimſical Voyage before, and now they come all into it of a ſudden, without any Conſideration; and ſo the Project of one Man muſt ruin the moſt promiſing Voyage in the World, and be the Death of above two Hundred as ſtout Fellows as ever were together in one Ship in this part of the World.

One of the Midſhipmen follow'd the Mate, and ſaid we were all promis'd that another Ship ſhould be gotten, either purchas'd or taken, and that the firſt Ship we took, ſhould be mann'd and victualled out of this Ship, where we were double mann'd and crowded together enough to bring an Infection among us, in ſuch hot Climates as we are going into; and if we were in the *South Seas*, we ſhould eaſily buy a Ship, or take a Ship for our Purpoſe, almoſt where we would; but in all this part of the World there is no ſuch thing as a Ship fit for an *Engliſh* Man to ſet his Foot in. We were promis'd too, that when we got into ſuch a Ship, we that enter'd as Midſhipmen ſhould be preferr'd to Offices as we were qualified, and as our Merit ſhould recommend us. What they are going to do with us now, I can't imagine, unleſs it be to turn us a-fore the Maſt

when half the Foremaſt Men are dead, and thrown over Board.

The Maſter, or Pilot of the Ship, heard all theſe Things, and ſent us word into the great Cabbin, of all that paſs'd, and, in ſhort, aſſured us, that if theſe Things went a little farther, he was afraid they would come up to a Mutiny; that there was great Danger of it already, and that we ought to apply ſome immediate Remedy to it, or elſe he thought it would be too late: He told me the Particulars alſo, and how the whole Weight of their Reſentment ſeem'd to tend to a quarelling at my Command, as believing that this Project of going to the *Eaſt Indies*, was wholly mine; and that the reſt of the Officers being a little influenc'd by the Accident of our being driven ſo far out of our way, were only biaſs'd in the reſt by my Opinion; and as they were all againſt it before, would have been ſo ſtill if it had not been for me; and he fear'd, if they went on, they might enter into ſome fatal Meaſures about me, and perhaps reſolve to ſet me a ſhore in ſome barren, uninhabited Land or other, to give me my Belly full of New Diſcoveries, as it ſeems ſome of them had hinted, and the ſecond Mate in particular.

I was far from being inſenſible of the Danger I was in, and indeed of the Danger the whole Voyage, Ship and all, was in; for I made no Queſtion, but that if their brutiſh Rage led them to one villainous Action, they would ſoon go on to another; and the Devil would take hold of that Handle to repreſent the Danger of their being puniſh'd for it when they came home; and ſo, as has been often the Caſe, prompt them to Mutiny againſt all Command, and run away with the Ship.

However,

However, I had presence of Mind enough to enter into proper Measures for our general Safety, and to prevent the worst in case of any Attempt upon me, first I represented the Case to the rest of the Gentlemen, and ask'd if they would stand by me, and by the Resolutions which we had taken for the Voyage; then I call'd in to our Assistance, the chief Mate, who was a Kinsman of one of our Owners, a bold, resolute Gentleman, and the Purser, who we knew was faithful to us; as also, the Surgeon, and the Carpenter: I engag'd them all to give me first their Opinions whether they were convinc'd of the Reasonableness of my Scheme for the Voyage I had propos'd; and that they might judge for themselves, laid it all before them again, arguing every part of it so clearly to them, that they were convinc'd entirely of its being the most rational Prospect of the Voyage for us, of any we could go about.

When I had done this, I recommended it to them to expostulate with the Men, and, if possible, to keep them in Temper, and keep them to their Duty; but at the same time, to stand all ready, and upon a Signal which I gave them, to come all to the Steerage, and defend the great Cabbin Door with all the other Hands, who they could be sure of; and in the mean time, to be very watchful over the Motions of the Men, and see what they drove at.

At the same time, I fortified my self with the *French* Captain, and the *Supra Cargo*, and the other Captain; and by the way, all the *French* Captain's Men were true to him (and he true to us) to a Man. We then brought a sufficient Store of Ammunition and small Arms into the great Cabbin,

bin, and ſecur'd the Steerage, as alſo the Round Houſe, ſo that we could not poſſibly be ſurpriz'd.

There was nothing done that Night, but the next Morning I was inform'd, that the Gunner and ſecond Mate were in a cloſe Cabal together, and one or two of the Midſhipmen, and that they had ſworn to one another, not that they would not go the Voyage as was propos'd, for that might have ended in their running away, which I ſhould not have been ſorry for; but in ſhort, their Oath was, that the Ship ſhould not go the Voyage; by which I was preſently to underſtand, that they had ſome Meaſures to take to prevent my Deſign of the Voyage to the *Phillipines*, and that perhaps this was to run away with the Ship to *Madagaſcar*, which was not far off.

I had however, this apparent Encouragement in this Caſe, *viz.* that as the Contrivance was yet but two Days old, for it was but two Days ſince they had any Notice of our Intentions to go, they would be ſome Days caballing and forming an Intereſt among the Men, to make up a Party ſtrong enough to make any Attempt; and that as I had a ſtrong Set of Men who would be as diligent the other way, they would be heaving and contriving one way and the other way to get the Men over to their Opinion, ſo that at leaſt it would be ſome time before they could make their Party up.

The thing was rightly conjectured, and the three Men above who had made themſelves the Head of the Mutineers, went on a pace, and my Men encreaſed too, as much as could be deſired for the time; but the *Friday* after, which was about five Days from the firſt Diſcovery, one of the Midſhipmen came and deſir'd to ſpeak with me, and deſir'd it might not, if poſſible, be known

that

that he was with me. I ask'd him if he desir'd to be alone, he said no, I might appoint who I thought convenient that I could trust, but that what he had to say, was of the last Importance to all our Lives, and that therefore he hop'd I would be very sure of them who I trusted in such a Case. Upon this I told him, I would name the chief Mate, the *French* Captain, and the *Supra Cargo*, and in the mean time, I bid him not be too much surpriz'd, for that I had already some Warning of the thing which I believ'd he had to tell me of, and that I was preparing all *Things* to disappoint it: That however I should not value his Fidelity the less, and that he might speak freely his Mind before those Men, for they were all in the Secret already, and he might be sure both of Protection and Reward.

Accordingly, I bid him go out upon the Quarter Deck, and walk there, and that when the chief Mate went off into the Round House, he should go down between Decks as if he was going into his Cabbin to sleep, and that when he heard the chief Mate call the Cabbin Boy, a Black of mine, whose Name was *Spartivento*, he should take that for a Signal that the Steerage was clear, and he might come up, and should be let into the great Cabbin; all which, was so manag'd, and in so short a time, that he was with us in the great Cabbin in a Quarter of an Hour after the first Conference, and none of the Men perceiv'd it.

Here he let me into the whole Secret, and a black Project it was; *viz.* That the second Mate, the Gunner, three Midshipmen, the Coxswain, and about six and thirty of the Men, had resolved to mutiny and seize upon all us who were in the new Project, as they call'd it; and to confine

us firſt, then to ſet us on Shore, either there where we were, or ſome where elſe, and ſo carry the Ship away to the *South Seas*, and then to do as they found convenient; that is to ſay, in a Word, to ſeize upon me, the other Captain, the *French* Captain, the *Supra Cargo*, chief Mate, Doctor, and Carpenter, with ſome others, and run away with the Ship.

He told me, that they had not fully conſulted all their Meaſures, nor gain'd ſo many of the Men as they intended; that they were to ſouud ſome more of the Men the next Morning, and as ſoon as they had made their Number up fifty, they were reſolv'd to make the Attempt, which they did not queſtion would be by *Thurſday*, and this was *Monday* Morning; and that if they were then ready, they would make the Onſet at changing the Watch the ſame Evening. He added, that as they were to go on Shore the next Morning for freſh Water, I ſhould know the Truth of it by this; that the ſecond Mate would come to me, and tell me that they wanted more Water, and to know if I pleaſed the Boats ſhould go on Shore, and that if I pleaſed he would go with them, or any elſe who I pleas'd to appoint; and that upon Suppoſition that I would leave it to him, to take who he thought fit to go with him, he would then take Occaſion to chooſe the principal Conſpirators, that they might when they were on Shore, conſult their Meaſures for good and all.

I had all that Day *(Monday)* to order my Preparations, and upon this plain Intelligence, I reſolv'd to loſe no time, nor was it long before I reſolv'd what to do; for as their Deſign was deſperate, ſo I had nothing but deſperate Remedies to provide. Having therefore, as I ſay, ſettled my

my Meaſures, I call'd for the Cockſwain, and bid him man the Pinnace, for that I was to go on Shore, and I appointed only the *Supra Cargo*, and the Surgeon, and the *French* Captain, to go with me.

There were no *Engliſh* Ships in the Road, but there were about five *Dutch* Ships homeward bound waiting for more, and three outward bound. As I paſs'd by one of the outward bound *Eaſt India* Ships, the *French* Captain, as we had agreed before, pretended to know the Ship, and that the Commander was his old Acquaintance, and ask'd me to give him leave to viſit him, and told me he was ſure he would make us all welcome. I ſeem'd unwilling at firſt, telling him, I intended to go on Shore and pay my Reſpects to the Governor, and, as was uſual, to ask him leave to buy ſome Proviſions, and that the Governor would take it very ill if I did not go: However, upon his alledging that we would not ſtay, and that the *Dutch* Captain upon his going on board, would, he was ſure, give us a Letter of Recommendation to the Governor, by which we ſhould have every thing granted that we could deſire. Upon this, and his Importunity, I ſeemed to conſent, and we went all on board.

Captain *Merlotte*, who ſpoke *Dutch* very well, hal'd the Ship, ask'd the Captain's Name, and then ask'd if he was on Board; they anſwer'd yes, then he bid them tell him the Captain of the *Engliſh* Ship was come to viſit him; upon which, immediately their chief Mate bad them man the ſide, and ſtood at the ſide to receive us, and before we could get up, the *Dutch* Captain came upon the Quarter Deck to meet me, and with great Civility invited me into his Cabbin; and while

we were there, the chief Mate, by the Captain's Order, entertain'd the Boats Crew with like Civility.

When we were in the Cabbin, Captain *Merlotte* told the *Dutch* Captain that we came indeed to him in the Form of a Viſit, but that our Buſineſs was of the greateſt Importance, and begg'd we might ſpeak to him of it in the hearing of none but ſuch as he could truſt: The Captain told us with the greateſt open-heartedneſs imaginable, that tho' we were Strangers to him, yet we look'd like honeſt Men, and he would grant our Deſire; we ſhould ſpeak it in the hearing of none but thoſe we could truſt, for there ſhould be no body by but our ſelves.

We made him fully ſenſible that we knew how obliging that Compliment was, but begg'd he would admit any who he thought worthy to be truſted with a Secret of the laſt Importance. He then carried it as far t'other way, and told us, that then he muſt call in the whole Ship's Company, for that there was not a Man in the Ship but he could truſt his Life in his Hands. However, upon the whole, he ſent every Body out of the Cabbin but us three and himſelf, and then deſir'd we would ſpeak our Minds freely.

Captain *Merlotte*, who ſpoke *Dutch*, began, but the Captain interrupted him, and ask'd if the *Engliſh* Captain, (meaning me) ſpoke *Dutch*; he ſaid no, upon which he ask'd Captain *Merlotte* if he ſpoke *Engliſh*, and he ſaid yes, upon which he let me know that he underſtood *Engliſh*, and deſir'd I would ſpeak to him in *Engliſh*.

I was heartily glad of this, and began immediately with the Story, for we had time little enough. I told him that he was particularly happy,

happy, that as he ſaid, could put his Life in the Hand of any Man, the meaneſt in his Ship; that my Men were unhappily the reverſe of his; and then beginning at the firſt of the Story, I gave him a full Account of the whole, as related above.

He was extremely affected with it, and ask'd me what he could do to ſerve me, and aſſur'd me that he would not only do what in him lay, but would engage all the Ships in the Road to do the like, and the Governor alſo on Shore. I thanked him very ſincerely, and told him, that what at preſent was the thing I thought lay before me, was this, *viz.* that the chief Conſpirators would be on Shore to morrow, with one, or perhaps two, of our Boats, to fetch Water, and get ſome freſh Proviſions, and I would be very glad to have them ſeiz'd upon by Surprize, when they were on Shore, and that then I thought I could maſter the reſt on Board well enough.

Leave that to me, ſays he, I'll give the Governor Notice this Evening, and as ſoon as they come on Shore they ſhall be all ſeiz'd; but, ſays he, if you think they may incline to make any Reſiſtance, I'll write a Line to the Governor, and give it you now; then when your Men go on Shore, order one or two of the principal Rogues to go and wait on the Governor with the Letter from you, and when he receives it, he ſhall ſecure them there; ſo they will be divided and taken with the more Eaſe.

In the mean time, adds he, while this is doing on Shore, I'll come on board your Ship, with my Long Boat and Pinnace, and as many Men as you pleaſe, to repay you the Compliment of this Viſit, and aſſiſt you in reducing the reſt.

This was ſo kind, and ſo compleatly what I deſir'd, that I could have asked nothing more or leſs; and I accepted his Viſit in his Barge, which I thought would be enough, but was afraid that if more came, our Men might be alarm'd, and take Arms before I was ready; ſo we agreed upon that, and that if I deſir'd more Help, I ſhould hang out a Signal, *viz.* a Red Antient on the Mizen Top.

All Things being thus conſulted, I return'd on Board, pretending to our Men that I had ſpent ſo much time on Board the *Dutch* Ship, that I could not go on Shore; and indeed ſome of my Men were ſo drunk, that they could ſcarce ſit to their Oars; and the Cockſwain was ſo very drunk, that I took Occaſion to ask Leave publickly, to leave him on Board till the next Day, giving the *Dutch* Captain alſo, a Hint that he was in the Conſpiracy, and I ſhould be glad to leave him on that Account.

The next Day about nine a Clock, the ſecond Mate came to me, and told me they wanted more Water, and if I pleaſed to order the Boat on Shore, he would go, if I thought fit, and ſee if he could get any freſh Proviſions, the Purſer being indiſpoſed: I told him yes, with all my Heart, that the *Dutch* Captain laſt Night had given me a Letter to the Governor, to deſire we might be furniſh'd with whatever we had Occaſion for, and that I had Thoughts of calling for him to go on Shore and deliver it, and that perhaps the Governor might make him ſome Preſent in Compliment to the *Engliſh* Nation.

He ſeem'd extremely pleas'd at this, and even elevated, and going out to give Orders about the Boat, order'd the Long Boat and the Shallop, and came

came in again, and ask'd me who I pleas'd to have go along with him; I anſwer'd, ſmilingly to him, pick and chooſe them your ſelf, only leave the Pinnaces Crew that went with me yeſterday, becauſe they muſt go on Board again to carry the *Dutch* Captain a little Preſent of *Engliſh* Beer that I am going to ſend him, and fetch a board their drunken Cockſwain, who was ſo drunk, we was fain to leave him behind us.

This was juſt what he wanted; and we found he choſe all the chief Rogues of the Conſpiracy; ſuch as the Boatſwain, the Gunner, the Midſhipmen we ſpoke of, and ſuch of the Foremoſt Men as he had ſecur'd in his Deſign, and of the reſt, we judg'd they were in the Plot, becauſe he took them with him; and thus having the Long Boat and the Shallop, with about ſix and thirty Men with them, away they went to fill Water.

When they came on Shore, they had preſently three *Dutch* Men, ſet by the *Dutch* Captain, unperceiv'd by them, to be Spies upon them, and to mark exactly what they did; and at the ſame time, they found three Boats of *Dutch* Men at the watering place, for the Captain had gotten two Boats to go on Shore from two other Ships, full of Men alſo, having acquainted them with the Deſign. As ſoon as our Boats came on Shore, the Men appear'd to be all very much engag'd in ſomething more than ordinary, and in ſtead of ſeparating, as it was expected they ſhould, they went all into one Boat, and there they were mighty buſy engag'd in Diſcourſe one with another.

The *Dutch* Captain had given the Charge of theſe Things to a brisk, bold Fellow, his Mate, and he took the Hints the Captain gave him, ſo

 well,

well, that nothing could have been better; for finding the Men thus in a kind of a Cabal, he takes four of his Men with Muskets on their Shoulders, like the Governor's Men, and goes with them to the *English* Mens Boat, and asks for their Officer, the ſecond Mate, who upon this appears: He tells them he comes from the Governor, to know if they were *English* Men, and what their Buſineſs was on Shore there: The Mate anſwer'd, they came from on board the *English* Ship, that they were driven there by ſtreſs of Weather, and hoped they might have Leave to fill Water and buy Neceſſaries for their Money. He told them he ſuppos'd the Governor would not refuſe them when he knew who they were, but that it was but good Manners to ask leave: The *English* Man told him, that he had not yet fill'd any Water, or bought any Proviſions, and that he had a Letter to the Governor, from the Captain, which he ſuppos'd was to pay the uſual Civilities to him, and to give him the Civility of asking leave, as was expected.

The *Dutch* Man anſwer'd, that was *Hael weel*, that he might go and carry it if he pleaſed then, and if the Governor gave them Leave, all was right and as it ſhould be; but that the Men could not be admitted to come on Shore till his Return. Upon this, away goes the ſecond Mate of our Ship, and three of the Men with him, whereof the Gunner was one; for he had ask'd the *Dutch* Man how many he might carry with him, and he told him three or four; and thoſe he took, you may be ſure were of the particular Men, who he had a Confidence in, becauſe of their converſing together by the way.

When

When they came to the Governor, the Mate ſent in a Meſſage firſt, *viz.* That he was come from on board the *Engliſh* Ship in the Road, and that he had a Letter from the Captain to his Excellence. The Governor, who had Notice given him of the Buſineſs, ſends out word, that the Gentlemen ſhould ſend in the Letter, and the Governor would give them an Anſwer: In the mean time, there appear'd a Guard of Soldiers at the Governor's Houſe, and the four *Engliſh* Men were let into the outer Room, where the Door was ſhut after them, and the Soldiers ſtood without the Door, and more Soldiers in another Room between them and the Parlour which the Governor ſat in.

After ſome time, the Mate was call'd in, and the Governor told him, that he had read the Letter which he brought, and ask'd him, by an Interpreter, if he knew the Contents of it; he anſwer'd No: The Governor replied, he ſuppoſed not, for if he had, he would ſcarce have brought it; at the ſame time told him, he was oblig'd to make him and all his Men Priſoners, at the Requeſt of their own Captain, for a Conſpiracy to raiſe a Mutiny and run away with the Ship. Upon which, two great fat *Dutch* Men came up to him and bid him deliver his Sword, which he did with ſome Reluctance; for he was a ſtout, deſperate, and ſtrong Fellow; but he ſaw it all to no purpoſe to diſpute or reſiſt.

At the ſame time, the three Men without were made Priſoners alſo, by the Soldiers. When the Governor had thus ſecur'd theſe Men, he call'd them in and enquir'd the Particulars of the Caſe, and expoſtulated with them very courteouſly upon ſuch a horrid, villainous Practiſe, and enquir'd

of them what the Occaſion could be; and hearing all they had to ſay in their Defence, told them he could do nothing in it more, till their Captain came on Shore, which would be in a Day or two, and that in the mean time, they muſt be content to remain in Cuſtody, which they did, ſeparated from one another. They were very civilly treated, but ſtrictly kept from ſpeaking with one another, or ſending any Meſſages to one another, or to the Boats.

When this was done, the Governor ſent ſix Files of Muſqueteers down to the watering place, with Order to ſecure all the *Engliſh* Men in the two Boats, which was done. They pretended to make ſome Reſiſtance at firſt, being all very well arm'd; but the Seamen of the three *Dutch* Long Boats, joining themſelves to the Soldiers, and Notice being given the *Engliſh* Seamen, that if they fir'd one Gun, they ſhould have no Quarter, and eſpecially their two principal Men, the chief Mate, and the Gunner, being abſent, they ſubmitted, and were all made Priſoners alſo.

When this was done, of which the *Dutch* Captain had Notice, by a Signal from the Shore, he came off in his Shallop, with about ſixteen Seamen, and five or ſix Gentlemen and Officers, to pay his Viſit to me. I receiv'd him with all the Appearance of Ceremony imaginable, cauſed a handſome Dinner to be prepar'd for him, and caus'd his Men to be all treated upon the Deck, and made mighty Preparation for a Feaſt.

But in the Middle of all this, Captain *Merlotte*, with all his *French* Men, being thirty two, appear'd in Arms on the Quarter Deck; the *Dutch* Captain's Attendants ſtood to their Arms on the Main Deck, and I, with the *Supra*

Cargo,

Part I. Pag. 40.

Cargo, the Doctor, and the other Captain, leaving the *Dutch* Captain and ſome Men in the great Cabbin as a Reſerve, came to the Steerage Door, clear'd the Steerage behind me, and ſtood there with a Cutlaſh in my Hand, but ſaid nothing; neither was there a Word ſpoke any where all the while.

In this Juncture, the chief Mate, the faithful Midſhipmen, the Carpenter, and the Gunner's Mate, with about twenty Men, who they could truſt, went fore and aft between Decks, and ſecur'd all the particular Men that we had the leaſt Suſpicion of, being no leſs than thirty five more: Theſe they ſecur'd, bringing them up into the Steerage, where their Hands were tyed behind them, and they were commanded not to ſpeak one Word to one another, upon pain of preſent Death.

When this was done, the chief Mate came to me to the Steerage Door, and paſſing by, went forward on with his Men, enter'd the Cook Room, and poſted himſelf at the Cook Room Door. There might be ſtill about eighty Men upon the Forecaſtle, and Midſhips upon the open Decks; and there they ſtood ſtaring, and ſurpriz'd at what was doing, but not being able to gueſs in the leaſt what was meant, what was the Cauſe of it, or what was intended to be done farther.

When I found all Things ready, I ſtept forward a Step or two, and beckoning to the Mate to command Silence, I told the Men, that I was not diſpos'd to hurt any Man, nor had I done what I now did, but by Neceſſity, and that I expected they ſhould all ſubmit; that if any one of them made the leaſt Reſiſtance, he was a dead Man,

Man, but that if they would be eaſy and quiet, I ſhould give a very good Account to them all, of every part of the Voyage, or Scheme of a Voyage which I had laid, and which had been ſo ill repreſented to them.

Then I cauſed my Commiſſion or Letter of Mart to be read to them all, by which it appear'd, that I was really chief Commander of the Ship, and had a right to direct the Voyage as I thought beſt; with a Paper of written Inſtructions, ſign'd by the Owners and Adventurers, and directed to me, with another Paper of Inſtructions to all the Officers, to be directed by me in all Things; which indeed, was all News to them, for they did not think I was the chief Captain or Commander of the Ship and Voyage.

When I had done this, I gave them a long and full Account of the Reaſons why I thought it beſt as our preſent Circumſtances were ſtated, not to go to the *South Seas* firſt, but to go away to the *Phillipine* Iſlands, and what great Proſpect of Advantage to the Owners there was, as well as to the Men; and that I wondered much that ſuch Meaſures were taking in the Ship as I heard there were; and that I was not, they might ſee, unprovided of Means to reduce every one of them to their Duty by Force, and to puniſh thoſe that were guilty as they deſerv'd; but that I rather deſir'd to win them by Kindneſs; and that therefore I had reſolv'd, that if any of them had any reaſon to diſlike the Voyage, they ſhould be fairly ſet on Shore, and ſhould go to the ſecond Mate and his Comrades: And as I named the ſecond Mate, I told them what Circumſtances they were in, and how effectually they were ſecur'd.

This

This aſtoniſh'd them, and ſurpriz'd them exceedingly, and ſome of them enquir'd more particularly into the Circumſtances of the ſaid ſecond Mate and his Fellows: I told them they were ſafe enough, and ſhould remain ſo: For as I could prove they had all a villainous Deſign to run away with the Ship, and ſet me on Shore, either here, or in a worſe place, I thought that only upon account of my own Safety, ſuch Men were not fit to go in the Ship, being once capable to entertain ſuch horrid, miſchievous Thoughts, or that could be guilty of ſuch a Villany; and that if any of them were of their Minds, they were very welcome, if they thought fit, to go to them. At this Word, ſome bold Rogues upon the Forecaſtle, which I did not diſcern, by reaſon of the Number that ſtood there, cried out *One and all*, which was a Cry at that time of Mutiny and Rebellion, that was certain, and in its kind very dangerous.

However, to let them ſee I was not to be daunted with it, I call'd out to one of the Men among them, who I ſaw upon the Forecaſtle; you *Jones*, *ſays I*, tell me who that was, and come away from them, for I'll make an Example of him whoever 'tis, *Will. Jones* ſlunk in among the reſt, and made me no Anſwer, and immediately *One and all* was cried again, and a little Huzza with it, and ſome of the Men appear'd to have ſome Fire Arms with them. There was a great many of them, and I preſently foreſaw, that if I went to the Extremity, I ſhould ſpoil the Voyage, tho' I conquer'd them; ſo I bridled my Paſſion with all my Might, and ſaid calmly, very well Gentlemen, let me know what it is you mean by *One and all*; I offered any of you that did

did not like to go the Voyage, might quit the Ship, is that it you intend by *One and all?* If fo, you are welcome, and pray take care to do it immediately; as for what Chefts or Clothes you have in the Ship, you fhall have them all with you. Upon this I made the chief Mate, who was now come to me again, advance a little with fome more Men, and get between the Men upon the Forecaftle, and thofe who were upon the Main Deck; and, as if he had wanted Room, when he was gotten between them, he faid to them, ftand aft a little Gentlemen, and fo crowded them towards me.

As they came nearer and nearer to where I ftood, I had Opportunity to fpeak to them fingly, which I did calmly and fmiling: *Why how now Tom,* fays I to one of them, what are you among the Mutineers? *Lord Sir,* fays *Tom, not I, they are mad I think, I have nothing to fay to them; I care not where I go, not I; I'll go round the Globe with you, its all one to me.* Well *Tom, fays I,* but what do you do among them then? come away into the Steerage, *and fhow your felf an honeft Man.* So *Tom* comes in, and after him another, and then two more; upon my faying to *Tom* what do you do among them, one of the Fellows fays to one of the Officers that ftood at a little Diftance from me, *what does* the Captain mean by faying among them, what does he reckon us to be in the Plot? He is quite wrong, we are all ignorant, and furpriz'd at it. He immediately tells me this, and I was glad, you may be fure, to hear it, and faid aloud to the Man he fpoke to, If they are honeft Men and would not appear in this Villany, let them go down between Decks and get out of the way, that they may have no Share

in

in the Puniſhment, if they have none in the Crime. *With all my Heart*, ſays one, *God bleſs you Captain*, ſays another, and away they dropt one by one in at the Steerage Door, and down between Decks, every one to his Hammock or Cabbin, till there was not above five or ſix of them left.

By this time, our two Boats appear'd from the Shore, being both mann'd with *Dutch* Men, *viz.* the *Dutch* Captain's Mate and about twenty of his Men, all the Water Casks full, but not a Man of mine with them, for they were left a Shore in ſafe Cuſtody.

I waited till they came on Board, and then turning to the Men on the Forecaſtle, I told them they ſhould go on Board the Boats immediately, as ſoon as the Buts of Water were hoiſted in. They ſtill ſaid *One and all*, they were ready, deſir'd they might go and fetch their Clothes: No, no, ſays I, not a Man of you ſhall ſet your Foot any more into the Ship; but go get you into the Boats, and what is your own, ſhall be given you into the Boat.

As I ſpoke this in an angry Tone, and with a kind of Paſſion, that look'd provok'd to a high Degree, they began to ſee they had no Room to chooſe; and ſome of them ſlipt down the Scuttle into the Cook Room. I had order'd the Officer who was there, who was one of the Midſhipmen, to wink at it, and let as many come down as offered it, and the honeſt Man did more than that; for he went to the Scuttle himſelf, and as if he had whiſper'd,ſo that I ſhould not hear him, call'd them one by one by their Names, and argued with them: *Prithee Jack*, ſays he to one of them, don't you be diſtracted and ruin your

ſelf

ſelf to gratify a raſh drunken Humour; if you go into the Boat you are undone, you will be ſeiz'd as ſoon as you come a Shore as the reſt are, and will be ſent to *England* in Irons, and there you will be infallibly hang'd; why you are certainly all mad. *Jack* replies, he had no deſign to mutiny, but the ſecond Mate drew him in, and he did not know what to do, he wiſh'd he had not meddled, but he was undone, now what could he do? *Do*, ſays the the Midſhip-man, leave them for Shame, and ſlip down here, and I'll ſee and get you off if I can. Accordingly he pull'd him down, and after him ſo many got out of Sight the ſame Way that there was not above Seventeen or Eighteen left upon the Forecaſtle.

I ſeem'd to take no Notice of that, till at laſt one of the Men that was left there with his Hat or Cap in his Hand, ſtepping juſt to the Edge of the Forecaſtle which was next to me, ſaid, with a very reſpectful Manner, That I ſaw how many had ſlunk away and made their Peace, or at leaſt obtained Pardon, and that I might, perhaps, know that they who were left were only ſuch as had their Duty there, being placed there of Courſe before the Mutiny began, and that they had no Hand in it, but abhorr'd it with all their Hearts, which he hoped I would conſider and not joyn them with thoſe that had offended, meerly becauſe they came upon the Forecaſtle and mix'd there with the Men who had the Watch.

I told him if that was true it would be in their Favour, but I expected he would prove it to my Satisfaction before I accepted that for an Excuſe. He told me it might, perhaps, be

hard

hard to prove it, ſeeing the Boatſwain and his Mate, and the ſecond Mate were gone, but the reſt of the Ship's Crew could all teſtify that they were a Part of the Men whoſe Watch it was, and that they were upon the Forecaſtle by the Neceſſity of their Duty and no otherwiſe, and call'd ſuch and ſuch Men who were upon Duty with them to witneſs it, who did confirm it.

Upon this, I found my ſelf under a Neceſſity, in Juſtice to the Men, to approve it: But my own Management was a Bite upon my ſelf in it; for tho' I did allow the Midſhip-men to wink at their ſlipping away as before, yet I made no Queſtion but I ſhould have ſome left to make Examples of; but as I could not go back from the Promiſe of Mercy which I had allow'd the Midſhip-man to offer in my Name: So I trick'd my ſelf by their Miſtake into a Neceſſity of pardoning them all, which was very far from my Deſign; but there was no Remedy.

However, the Men, when they were ſo happily eſcaped, deſired the Midſhip-men, who had been inſtrumental to deliver them, to aſſure me, that as they were ſenſible they had deſerved very ill at my Hands, and that yet I had treated them thus kindly, they would not only reveal to me all the Particulars of the Conſpiracy and the Names of thoſe principally concern'd in it, but that they would aſſure me, they would never more diſpute any of my Meaſures, but were very ready to do their Duty as Seamen to what Part of the World ſoever I might think fit to go, or which Way I thought fit to carry them; whether outward or homeward, and that they gave me the tender of their Duty in this Man-

ner

ner with the utmoſt Sincerity and with Thankfulneſs for my having forgiven them that Conduct which was the worſt that a Seaman could be guilty of.

I took this very kindly, and ſent them Word I did ſo, and that they ſhould find they had taken the wiſer Courſe, that I had an intire Confidence in their Fidelity, and that they ſhould never find I would reproach them with, or uſe them the worſe for what had paſt.

I muſt confeſs, I was very glad of this Submiſſion of the Men; for tho' by the Meaſures I had taken I was ſatisfied I ſhould conquer them, and that I was ſafe from their Attempts; yet carrying it on by Reſentment, and doing Juſtice upon the Offenders, whatever Advantage it had one Way, had this Diſadvantage in the Conſequence; (*viz.*) that it would ruin the Voyage, for at leaſt half the Men were in the Plot.

But having thus conquer'd them by good Uſage, I thought my next Work was to enquire into the Miſtakes which had been the Foundation of all this: So before I parted with the Men who had returned to their Duty, I told them, that as I had freely forgiven what was paſt, ſo I would keep my Word with them, that I would never reproach them with it; but that I thought it was neceſſary their Judgments ſhould be convinc'd how much they were impos'd upon, as well as their Tempers be reduced by my Kindneſs to them. That I was of the Opinion that they had been abuſed in the Account given them of what I had deſign'd to do, and of the Reaſons I had to give for doing it; and I would deſire them to let me know afterwards, whether they had been faithfully inform'd

form'd of Things or not; and whether in their own Judgment, now when they were freed from the Prepoſſeſſions they were under, they could object any Thing againſt it or no.

This I did with Reſpect to the other Men who I had made Priſoners in the Steerage, who I had the ſame Deſign to be kind to as I had to theſe; but upon whom I reſolv'd to work this Way, becauſe, after all, I might have this Work to do over again if I ſhould meet with any Diſappointment or Miſcarriage in the Voyage; or eſpecially if we ſhould be put to any Straits or Diſtreſs in the purſuing it.

In order to this, I cauſed the Voyage it ſelf, and the Reaſons of it, the Nature of the Trade I was to carry on by it, the Purſuit of it to the *South-Seas*; and in a Word, every Thing juſt as we had argued and ſettled it in the great Cabbin, to be put into Writing and read to them.

The Fellows, every one of them, declar'd they were fully ſatisfied in the Voyage it ſelf, and that my Reaſons for it were perfectly good; and that they had received a quite different Account of it; as that I would carry them into the Iſland of the *Moluccas*, which was the moſt unhealthy Part of the *Eaſt-Indies*; that I would go away to the *South* for new Diſcoveries; and that I would go away thence to the *South-Seas*; which was a Voyage of ſuch a Length that no Ship could victual for; that it was impoſſible to carry freſh Water ſuch a Length; and in a Word, that it was a Voyage that would deſtroy us all.

It was the chief Mate and the Midſhip-man who took them all down the Scuttle, that

brought me this Account from them; ſo I made him take two of thoſe penitent Mutineers with him, and go to the Men in the Steerage, who he had made Priſoners at firſt, and ſee whether their Deluſions were of the ſame Kind, and what kind of Temper they were in: Accordingly he went to them directly, for this was not a Buſineſs that admitted giving them Time to club and Cabal together, and form other Societies or Combinations which might have Conſequences fatal to us ſtill.

When he came to them, he told them, the Captain was willing to do all the Juſtice poſſible to his Men, and to uſe them on all Occaſions with Equity and Kindneſs; I ordered him to enquire calmly what it was had mov'd them to theſe Diſorders, and what it was which they had been made to believe was doing, that they could enter into Meaſures ſo deſtructive to themſelves, and to thoſe who had entruſted them all with the Ship and Cargo; for that in a Voyage every Foremaſt-man, in his Degree, is truſted with the Safety of the whole Ship.

They anſwered it was the Mate; that they had never ſhewn themſelves diſcontented, much leſs diſorderly in the Ship; that they had on all Occaſions done their Duty thro' the whole Voyage till now, and that they had no ill Deſign upon any one, much leſs had they any Deſign to deſtroy the Voyage or injure the Captain; but that they were all told by the ſecond Mate, that the Captain had impos'd upon them, that he had propos'd a mad Voyage to the *South Pole* that would murther them all, and that they were to lay aſide the Trading and Cruiſing Voyages which they came out upon, and were

now

now to ſpend the whole Voyage in new Diſcoveries; by which the Men could propoſe nothing to themſelves but Hardſhips, and perhaps periſhing with Hunger and Cold; whereas, had they gone to the *South-Seas* as was intended, they might all have been made; and that the Hazards with that Proſpect, had ſome Senſe in them; whereas in this Project, there was nothing but certain Deſtruction.

The Mate deliver'd them a Copy of the Scheme I had propos'd, the Reaſons of it, the Trade I had deſign'd, the Return I was to make, and every Thing as I have already mention'd it, and bid them take it and conſider of it.

As I was juſtly provoked to ſee how I had been abuſed and miſrepreſented to the Men, ſo they were aſtoniſh'd when they read my Scheme and ſaw what Miſchiefs they had been led into for they know not what, and without any Reaſon or juſt Conſideration: And after they had debated Things a while among themſelves, they deſir'd the chief Mate might come to them again, which he did: Then they told him, that as they had been thus groſsly abus'd and drawn into miſchiefs which they never deſign'd, by ſuch plauſible Pretences, and by being told ſuch a long Story full of Lies, and to carry on a helliſh Project of the ſecond Mates; they hoped then, being ſo much impos'd upon, would a little extenuate their Fault; that they were convinc'd, that the Captain had propos'd nothing but what was very rational, and a Voyage that might be very profitable to the Owners and to themſelves; and they entirely threw themſelves upon the Captain's Mercy, and humbly begg'd Pardon; that if I pleas'd to forgive them, they

would endeavour to merit ſuch Forgiveneſs by their future Behaviour; and that in the mean Time, they ſubmitted to what Puniſhment I pleas'd to lay upon them: And particularly, that as they had forfeited, by their Conſpiracy, all the Claim they had upon the Ship, and might juſtly have been turn'd a-ſhore at the firſt Land they came to, they were willing to ſine a Diſcharge for all their Wages due to them, which was now near eight Months a Man, and to be conſidered for the reſt of the Voyage as they deſerv'd: That they would all take a Solemn Oath of Fidelity to me to do their Duty, to go wherever I would carry them, and to behave with the greateſt Submiſſion and Diligence, in Hopes to regain my Favour by their future Behaviour, and to ſhew their Gratitude for the Pardon I ſhould grant them.

This was indeed juſt as I would have it, for I wanted nothing more than to have ſomething offered, which I might give them back again; for I ever thought, and have found it by Experience to be the beſt Way; and Men were always ſecured in their Duty by a generous Kindneſs, better than by abſolute Dominion and Severity: Indeed my Opinion was juſtified in all the Meaſures I took with theſe Men; for as I found they were ſufficiently humbled, and that I had brought them low enough, I let them know, that it was not their Puniſhment but their Amendment that I deſired; that I ſcorn'd to make a Prey of them, and take that Forfeiture they had offer'd, ſo putting the Wages due to them for their Labour in my Pocket. But I ſent them Word, I was very glad to hear that they were ſenſible how much they had been impos'd

impos'd upon; that as it was not my Defign to offer any Thing to them, which they or any honeft Men ought to refufe, fo it was not my Defire to make any Advantages of their Follies,but what might tend to bringing them back to their Duty; that as I had no Profpect that was inconfiftent with their Safety and intereft,fo I fcorn'd to make a Profit of their Submiffion; that as to their Wages, tho' they had forfeited it by their Mutiny, yet God forbid I fhould make it my Profit: and fince forgiving their Offence was in my Power, the Crime being in one Particular an Offence againft me, they fhould never be able to fay I made a Gain of their Submiffion, and like the Pope fhould fell them my Pardon; that upon their folemn engaging to me never to offer the leaft Difturbance of any Kind in the Ship for the future, but to do their Duty faithfully and Chearfully, I would forget all that was paft; only this I expected, (*viz.*) that two of them who were particularly guilty of threat'ning the Life of Captain *Merlotte*, fhould be punifh'd as they deferv'd.

They could not deny but this was moft juft; and they did not fo much as offer to intercede for thofe two: But when one of the two mov'd the reft, they anfwer'd they could not do it, for they had received Favour enough for themfelves, and they could not defire any Thing of the Captain for their Sakes, for they had all deferv'd Punifhment as well as they.

In a Word, the two Men were brought to the Geers, and foundly whipp'd and pickl'd; and they all prov'd very honeft ever after: And thefe, as I faid at firft were two and thirty in all.

All this while Captain *Merlotte* with his *French* Men were in Arms, and had Poſſeſſion on the Quarter Deck to the Number of 23 ſtout Men; I had Poſſeſſion of the Main-deck with 18 Men and the 16 *Dutch* Men, and my chief Mate, with the Midſhip-man had Poſſeſſion of the Cook-room and the Quarter-deck; the *Dutch* Captain, our *Supra Cargo*, the Surgeon, and the other Captain kept the Great Cabbin, with a Guard of 12 Muſqueteers without the Door, and about 8 more within, beſides Servants. Captain *Merlotte*'s Man alſo had a Guard of eight Men in the Round-houſe. I had now nothing to do but with my Men who were on Shore; and of theſe, ſix of them were indifference, being Men not embark'd in the Deſign, but carried on Shoar by the chief Mate, with a Deſign to engage them with him; ſo that indeed they fell into a Puniſhment before they fell into the Crime, and what to do with theſe Men was the Caſe.

The firſt Thing I did, was to diſmiſs my Viſitor the *Dutch* Captain, who I had a great deal of Reaſon to think my ſelf exceedingly oblig'd to: And firſt I handſomely rewarded his Men, to whom I gave four Pieces of Eight a Man; and having waited on the Captain to the Ship's Side and ſeen him into his Boat, I fired him 21 Guns at his going off; for which he fired 25 when he came on board his Ship. The ſame Afternoon I ſent my Pinnace on board him for my drunken Cockſwain, and with the Pinnace I ſent the Captain three dozen Bottles of *Engliſh* Beer, and a Quarter-cask of Canary, which was the beſt Preſent I had to make him; and ſent every one of his other Seamen a Piece of Eight

per

per Man; and indeed the Aſſiſtance I had from the Ship deſerv'd it; and to the Mate who acted ſo bravely with my Men on Shore I ſent 50 Pieces of Eight.

The next Day I went on Shore to pay my Reſpects to the Governour, when I had all the Priſoners deliver'd up to me; the ſix Men I cauſed to be immediately ſet at Liberty, as having been innocent, and brought all the reſt on board tied Hand and Foot as Priſoners, and continued them ſo a great while afterward as you ſhall hear: As for the ſecond Mate, I tryed him formally by a Council of War, as I was empower'd by my Commiſſion to do, and ſentenced him to be hang'd at the Yard Arm: And tho' I ſuſpended the Execution from Day to Day, yet I kept him in Expectation of the Halter every Hour; which, to ſome, would have been as grievous as the Hanging it ſelf.

Thus we conquered this deſperate Mutiny, all principally proceeding from ſuffering the private Diſputes among our ſelves, which ought to have been the *Arcana* of the whole Voyage, and kept as ſecret as Death it ſelf could have kept it, I mean ſo, as not to come among the Seamen afore the Maſt.

We lay here 12 Days, during which Time, we took in freſh Water as much as we had Casks for, and was able to ſtow. On the 13th Day of *Auguſt* we weighed and ſtood away to the *Eaſt*, deſigning to make no Land any more till we came to *Java-Head*, and the *Streights* of *Sunda*; for that Way we intended to ſail: But the Wind ſprung up at *E.* and at *E. S. E.* and blew ſo freſh, that we was oblig'd, after two

Days beating againſt it, to bear away afore it, and run back to the Cape of *Good-Hope*.

While we were here, there came in two *Dutch Eaſt-India* Men more, homeward bound, to whom had happened a very odd Accident, *as follows:* They had been attack'd by a large Ship of 44 Guns, and a ſtout Sloop of 8 Guns; the *Dutch* Ships reſolving to aſſiſt one another, ſtood up to the *French* Man, *for ſuch it ſeems he was*, and fought him very warmly. The Engagement laſted ſix or ſeven Hours; in which the Privateer had kill'd them ſome Men; but in the Heat of the Fight, the Sloop receiv'd a Shot, which brought her Main-maſt by the Board; and this caus'd the Captain of the Frigate to ſheer off, fearing his Sloop would be taken; but the Sloop's Men took Care of themſelves, for halling a little out of the Fight, they got into their own Boats, and a Boat which the Frigate ſent to their Help, and abandon'd the Sloop; which the *Dutch* Men perceiving, they mann'd out their Boats, and ſent and took the Sloop with all that was in her, and brought her away with them.

The *Dutch* Men came into the Road at the Cape with this Prize while our Ship was there the ſecond Time; and we ſaw them bringing the Sloop in a Tow, having no Maſt ſtanding but a little Pole-maſt ſet up for the preſent, and her Mizen; which was alſo diſabled and of little Uſe to her.

I no ſooner ſaw her, but it came into my Thoughts, that if ſhe was any Thing of a Sea-Boat, ſhe would do our Buſineſs to a Tittle; and as we had always reſolved to get another Ship, but had been diſappointed, this would

answer

anſwer our End exactly: Accordingly I went with my chief Mate in our Shallop, on board my old Acquaintance the *Dutch* Captain, and enquiring there, was inform'd of the Caſe, that it was a Prize taken as above, and that in all Probability the Captain that took her would be glad to part with her; and the Captain promiſed me to go on board the Ship that brought her in, and enquire about it, and let me know.

Accordingly the next Morning, the Captain ſent me Word I might have her; that ſhe carried eight Guns, had good Store of Proviſions on board, with Ammunition ſufficient, and I might have her and all that was in her for 1200 Pieces of Eight. In a Word, I ſent my chief Mate back with the ſame Meſſenger and the Money; giving him Commiſſion to pay the Money and take Poſſeſſion of her if he lik'd her, which he did; and the *Dutch* Captain, my Friend, lent him 12 Men to bring her off to us; which they did the ſame Day.

I was a little put to it for a Maſt for her, having not any Thing on board that we could ſpare that was fit for a Main-maſt: But reſolving at laſt to maſt her not as a Sloop, but as a Brigantine, we made ſhift with what ſpare Pieces we had, and a ſpare Fortop-maſt, which one of the *Dutch* Ships help'd me to, ſo we fitted her up very handſomely, made her carry twelve Guns, and put 60 Men on board. One of the beſt Things we found on board her, was Cask, which we greatly wanted, eſpecially for Barrelling up Beef and other Proviſions, which we found very difficult; but our Cooper eked them out with making ſome new ones out of her old ones.

After

After ſtaying here 16 Days more, we ſail'd again indeed, I thought once we ſhould never have gone away at all; for it is certain above half the Men in the Ship had been made uneaſy, and there remained ſtill ſome miſ-underſtanding of my Deſign, and a Suppoſition of all the frightful Things the ſecond Mate had put into their Heads; and by his Means the Boatſwain and Gunner: As theſe three had the principal Management of the Conſpiracy, and that I had pardon'd all the reſt, I had ſome Thoughts of making an Example of theſe; I took Care to let them know it too, in a Manner, that they had no Room to think it was in jeſt, but that I intended to have them all three hang'd; and I kept them above three Weeks in Suſpenſe about it: However as I had no Intention to put them to Death, I thought it was a Piece of Cruelty ſomething worſe than Death to keep them continually in Expectation of it, and in a Place to where they had but little more than Room to breath.

So having been 17 Days gone from the Cape, I reſolved to relieve them a little; and yet at the ſame Time remove them out of the Way of doing me any capital Injury, if they ſhould have any ſuch Deſign ſtill in their Heads: For this Purpoſe I cauſed them to be removed out of the Ship into the Brigantine, and there I permitted them to have a little more Liberty than they had on board the great Ship; and where two of them entered into another deviliſh Conſpiracy, as wild and fooliſh as ever I heard of, or as, perhaps, was ever heard of; of which I ſhall ſay more in its Place.

We

We were now two Sail in Company, and we went away from the Cape the third of *September*, *Anno*. 1714. We found the Brigantine was an excellent Sea-boat, and could bear the Weather to a Miracle, and no bad Sailor; ſhe kept Pace with us on all Occaſions, and in a Storm we had at *S. S. E.* ſome Days after, ſhe ſhifted as well as we did in the great Ship, which made us all in Love with her.

This Storm drove us away to the *Northward*; and I once thought we ſhould have been driven back to the Cape again; which if it had happen'd, I believe we ſhould never have gone on with the Voyage; for the Men begun to murmur again, and ſay we were bewitch'd, that we were beaten off firſt from the *South* of *America*, that we could never get round there, and now driven back from the *South* of *Africa*; ſo that in ſhort it look'd as if Fate had determined this Voyage to be purſued no farther. The Wind continued and blew exceeding hard; and in ſhort, we were driven ſo far to the *North*, that we made the *South* Point of the Iſland of *Madagaſcar*.

My Pilot knew it to be *Madagaſcar* as ſoon as he had a clear View of the Land, and having beaten ſo long againſt the Sea to no Purpoſe, and being in Want of many Things, we reſolved to put in; and accordingly made for Port St. *Aguſtine*, on the *Weſt* Side of the Iſland, where we came to an Anchor in eleven fathom Water, and a very good Road.

I could not be without a great many Anxious Thoughts upon our coming into this Iſland; for I knew very well that there were a Gang of deſperate Rogues here, eſpecially on the *Northren*

thren Coaſt, who had been famous for their Pyracies; and I did not know but that they might be either ſtrong enough as Pyrates, to take us, or Rogues enough to entice a great many of my Men to run away: So I reſolv'd neither to come near enough the Shore to be ſurprized, nor to ſuffer any of my Men to go on ſhore, ſuch excepted as I could be very ſecure of.

But I was ſoon inform'd by a *Dutch* Man who came off to me with ſome of the Natives in a kind of Canvas Boat, that there were no *Europeans* there but himſelf, and the Pyrates were on the *North* Part of the Iſland; that they had no Ship with them of any Force, and that they would be glad to be fetch'd off by any Chriſtian Ship; that they were not above 200 in Number, their chief Leaders, with the only Ships of Force they had, being out a Cruiſing on the Coaſt of *Arabia*, and the Gulph of *Perſia*.

After this, I went on Shore my ſelf with Captain *Merlotte*, and ſome of the Men who I could truſt; and we found it true as the *Dutch* Man had related. The *Dutch* Man gave us a long Hiſtory of his Adventures, and how he came to be left there by a Ship he came in from *Europe*, which, he running up into the Country for Sport, with three more of his Comrades went away without them, and left them among the Natives, who however uſed them very well, and that now he ſerv'd them for an Interpreter and a Broker, to bargain for them with the *European* Ships for Proviſions. Accordingly he engag'd to bring us what Proviſions we pleas'd, and propos'd ſuch Trinkets in

in Return, as he knew the Natives deſir'd, and as were of Value little enough to us, but he deſir'd a Conſideration for himſelf in Money, which tho' it was of no uſe to him there, he ſaid, it might be hereafter; and as his Demand was but 20 Pieces of Eight, we thought he very well deſerv'd it.

Here we bought a great Quantity of Beef, which having no Casks to ſpare, we ſalted, and then cur'd it in the Sun by the *Dutch* Man's Direction, and it prov'd of excellent Uſe to us thro' the whole Voyage, for we kept ſome of it, till we came to *England*, but it was then ſo hard, that a good Hatchet would hardly cut it.

While we lay here, it came into my Thoughts, that now was a good Time to execute Juſtice upon my Priſoners, ſo I call'd up the Officers to a Kind of Council of War, and propoſed it to them in general Terms, not letting them know my Mind, as to the Manner of it. They all agreed that it was neceſſary, and the ſecond Mate, Boatſwain and Gunner, had ſo much Intelligence of it from the Men, that they prepar'd for Death, as much as if I had ſign'd a Dead Warrant for their Execution, and that they were to be hang'd at the Yard Arm. But in the Middle of thoſe Reſolves, I told the Council of Officers, my Deſign was, to the *North* Part of the Iſland, where a Gang of Pyrates were ſaid to be ſettled, and that I was perſwaded I might get a good Ship among them, and as many Men as we deſir'd, for that I was ſatisfied the greateſt Part of them were ſo wearied of their preſent Government, that they would

would be glad of an Opportunity to come away, and eſpecially ſuch as had either by Force, or raſh haſty Reſolutions been as it were ſurpriz'd into that ſort of Life; that I had been inform'd they were very far from being in ſuch a formidable Poſture, as they had been repreſented to us in *Europe*, or any thing near ſo Numerous, but that on the contrary we ſhould find them poor, divided, in Diſtreſs, and willing to get away upon any Terms they could.

Some of the Officers of the Ship differ'd from me in my Opinion; they had received ſuch Ideas of the Figure thoſe People made in *Madagaſcar*, from the common Report in *England*, that they had no Notion of them, but as of a little Common Wealth of Robbers; that they were immenſely rich, that Captain *Avery* was King of the Iſland, that they were near 8000 Men, that they had a good Squadron of ſtout Ships, and that they were able to reſiſt a whole Fleet of Men of War, having a Harbour ſo well fortified at the Entrance into it, that there was no coming at them without a good Army for Land Service, and the like.

I convinc'd them how impoſſible this was to be true, and told them all the Diſcourſe I had had with the *Dutch* Man, at the Place where I now was, who had had a full Account of it from ſeveral of them, who had come down to St. *Auguſtines* in little Boats, in order to make their Eſcape from them, and to get Paſſage for *Europe*; whom he had always aſſiſted, and got them off, as any Ship touch at that Port; and who all agreed in their Relati-

on

on of their Particulars, which were indeed miſerable enough, ſaving that they wanted neither Victuals or Clothes.

In a Word, I ſoon brought them to enter into the Reaſon of it, and to be of my Opinion, and accordingly I ordered to get ready, and in 3 days Time weigh'd, and ſtood away for the *North* of the Iſland; for by the Way we did not now communicate our Debates or Reſolves to the Men before the Maſt, as had been done defore, we had indeed had enough of that already.

While we were thus coaſting the Iſland, to the *North* and in the Channel or Sea between the Iſland and the Main of *Africa*, it came into my Thoughts, that I might now make Uſe of my Traytors to my Advantage and their Own too, and that I might if they were honeſt gain my End, and get a full Intelligence of the People I had my Eye upon, and if they were ſtill Traytors they would deſert and go over to the Pyrates, and I ſhould be well rid of them, without the Neceſſity of bringing them to the Yard Arm; for I was very uneaſy in my Mind about hanging them too, nor could I ever have been brought to do it, I believe, whatever Riſque I had run from their mutinous Diſpoſition.

I was now got in the Latitude of 15 Degrees and a half, *South* of the Line, and began to think of ſtanding in for the Shore; when I ordered the ſecond Mate who lay in Irons in the Brigantine, to be brought on Board the great Ship, and to be call'd up into the great Cabin. He came in great Concern, tho' he was of himſelf a very bold and reſolute Fellow, yet

as

as he made no doubt, that he was ſent for to Execution, he appear'd throughly ſoften'd, and quite another Man, than he was before.

When he was brought in, I cauſed him to be ſet down in a Nook of the Cabbin, where he could not ſtir to offer any Violence to me, if he had had any Will to it, two large Cheſts being juſt before him; and I order'd all my People to withdraw, except Captain *Merlotte* and the *Supra Cargo*; and then turning my ſelf to the Criminal, I told him he knew his Circumſtances, I need not repeat them, and the Fact for which he was brought into that Condition; that I had hitherto from time to time delay'd his Execution, contrary to the Opinion of the reſt of the chief Officers, who in full Council had unanimouſly condemn'd him; that I had a ſudden Thought came into my Head, which, if he knew how to merit Mercy, and to retrieve his Circumſtances by his future Fidelity, might once again put it into his Power, not only to ſave his Life, but to be truſted in the Ship again, if he inclined to be honeſt; that however if he had no Inclination to merit by his Service, I would put it to his Choice, either to undertake with Courage and Fidelity what I had to propoſe to him, in which Caſe he might expect to be very well treated, or if not, I would pardon him as to the Death he had Reaſon to expect, and he, with his two Fellow Criminals, ſhould be ſet on Shore to go whither they pleas'd.

He waited, without offering to ſpeak a Word, till I made a full Stop, and then ask'd me if I gave him Leave to anſwer; I told him yes; then he ask'd if I gave him Leave to ſpeak freely, and would not take Offence at what he might ſay; I told him he ſhould ſpeak as freely as if he had

never offended; and that as I had given him his Life, I now would give him my Word nothing he could ſay ſhould revoke the Grant; and that he ſhould not only go freely on Shore, *for I expected by his Words that he had made that Choice*, but that I would give him the the Lives of his two fellow Priſoners; and would give them Arms and Ammunition, and any Thing elſe that was reaſonable for them to ask, or neceſſary to their ſubſiſting on Shore in ſuch a Country.

He told me then, that, had it been any other Part of the World than at *Madagaſcar*, he would readily have choſen to have gone on Shore; nay, tho' the Place had been really deſolate and uninhabited; that he did not object becauſe my Offer was not very generous and kind, and it would be always with regret that he ſhould look back upon the Mercy he ſhould have received, and how ill he had deſerv'd it at my Hands.

But that as it was at this Place that I mentioned ſetting him at Liberty, he told me, that tho' he had been mutinous and diſorderly, for which he acknowledg'd he had deſerv'd to die, yet he hop'd I could not think ſo ill of him as to believe he could turn Pyrate; and begg'd that rather than entertain ſuch hard Thoughts of him, I would execute the worſt Part of the Sentence and ſend him out of the World a Penitent, and an honeſt Man; which he ſhould eſteem far better than to give him his Life in a Condition in which he could preſerve it upon no other Terms than thoſe of being the worſt of Villains: He added, that if there was any Thing he could do to deſerve ſo much Mercy as I intended him, he begg'd me that I would give him Room to

behave himſelf as became him, and he would leave it wholly to me, to uſe him as he ſhould deſerve, even to the recalling the Pardon that I had granted him.

I was extremely ſatisfied with what he ſaid, and more particularly with the Manner of his Speaking it: I told him I was glad to ſee that he had a Principle of ſo much Honeſty, at the Bottom of a Part ſo unhappy as he had acted; that I would be very far from prompting him to turn Pyrate, and much more from forcing him to do ſo; and that I would according to his Deſire put an Opportunity into his Hands to ſhew himſelf a new Man; and by his Fidelity to wipe out all that was paſt: And then, without any more Ceremony, I told him my whole Deſign, which was to ſend him, and four or five more Men with him, on Shore among the pyrates as Spies, to ſee what Condition they were in, and to ſee whether there was any Apprehenſions of Violence from them, or whether they were in the mean Circumſtances that I had Reaſon to believe they were in; and laſtly whether they had any Ship or Veſſel which might be bought of them, and whether Men might be had to encreaſe our Company; that is to ſay, ſuch Men as being penitent for their Rogueries, and tyred with their Miſeries, would be glad of the Opportunity of turning honeſt Men before they were brought to it by Diſtreſs and the Gallows.

He embraced the Offer with the greateſt readineſs, and gave me all the Aſſurances that I could deſire of his Fidelity. I then ask'd him whether he thought his two fellow Priſoners might be truſted upon the ſame Foot. He ask'd me

me if I would take it for a Piece of Sincerity, if after a Tryal, he ſhould tell me his Mind, and would not be diſpleaſed if he declined ſpeaking his Thoughts till he had talk'd with them: I told him he ſhould be at Liberty to give his farther Anſwer after he had propos'd it to him; but I inſiſted upon his Opinion firſt, becauſe it was only his Opinion that I ask'd now; whereas if he reported it to them, then he had no more to do but to report their Anſwer. He then ask'd me if I would pleaſe to grant him one Thing; (*viz.*) that whatever his Opinion ſhould be, that what he ſhould ſay ſhould be no Prejudice to them in their preſent Condition: I told him it was a reaſonable Caution in him, and I would aſſure him, that whatever he ſaid ſhould not do them any Prejudice; and to convince him of it, I gave him my Word that I would not put them to Death on any Account whatſoever merely for his Sake: He bow'd and thank'd me very heartily for that Grant, which he ſaid oblig'd him to be the plainer with me on that Head; and as he ſaid, he would not deceive me in any Thing whatever, ſo he would not in this eſpecially; and therefore told me, it was his Opinion they would not ſerve me faithfully; and he referr'd me to the Experience I ſhould find of it; and added, that he would be ſo juſt to me in the beginning, as that while he begg'd me to be merciful to them, yet for my own Sake he would alſo beg me not to truſt them.

I took the Hint, and ſaid no more at that Time, but ordered his Irons to be taken off, and ordred him to have leave to go to his former Cabbin, and to have his Cheſts and Things re-

ſtored to him; ſo that he was at full Liberty in the Ship, tho' not in any Office, or appointed to any particular Buſineſs. A Day or two after this, we made Land, which appear'd to be the *North West* Part of the Iſland, in the Latitude of thirteen Degrees thirty Minutes; and now I thought it was Time to put our Deſign in Execution; for I knew very well that it could not be a great Way from this Part of the Iſland where the Pyrates were to be heard of: So I ordered the Boat on Shore, with about ſixteen Men, to make Diſcoveries, and with them my new reſtored Man. I gave him no Inſtruction for any thing extraordinary at this Time; our Work now being only to find out where they were: The Boat came on board again at Night, for we had now ſtood in within two Leagues of the Shore, and brought us an Account, that there were no *Engliſh* or *Europeans* at all thereabouts, but that they were to be heard of a great Way farther: So we ſtood away to the *North* all the Night, and the next Day, the Wind being fair and the Sea ſmooth, and by our Reckoning we went in that Time about forty Leagues.

The next Evening, the ſame Company went on Shore again, and were ſhew'd by ſome of the Natives where the Pyrates inhabited; which in ſhort, was about five or ſix and twenty Miles farther *North* ſtill, in a River very commodious for Shipping, where they had five or ſix *European* built Ships, and two or three Sloops; but they were all laid up, except two Sloops, with which they cruiſed ſometimes a great Diſtance off to the *North*, as far as the *Arabian* Gulph: He returned with this Intelligence the ſame Night; and

and by his Direction, we ſtood in as cloſe under the Shore, as we could conveniently, about ſix Leagues farther *North*; here we found a very good Road under a little Cape, which kept us perfectly undiſcovered; and in the Morning before Day, my Man went on Shore again with the Boat, and keeping only four Men with him, ſent the Boat on board again, agreeing on a Signal for us to ſend the Boat for him again when he ſhould return.

There was a pretty high Ledge of Hills to the *North* of the Place where he landed, and which running *Weſt* made the little Cape under the Lee of which our Ship rode at an Anchor as above. As ſoon as he came to the top of thoſe Hills he plainly diſcovered the Creek or Harbour where the Pyrate Ships lay, and where they had form'd their Encampment on the Shore. Our Men took ſuch proper Obſervations of the Scituation of the Place they were in, upon the Hill, that they might not fail to find their Way back again, tho' it were in the Night; and having agreed in the Account they ſhould give of themſelves, ſo that they might be all found in the ſame Tale. They boldly went down the Hill, and came to the Edge of the Creek; the Pyrates Camp being on the other Shore.

Here they fir'd a Gun to raiſe a kind of Allarm among them, and then hanging out a white Cloth on the top of a Pole, a Signal of Peace, they Hail'd them in *Engliſh*, and ask'd them if they would ſend a Boat and fetch them over.

The Pyrates were ſurpriz'd at the Noiſe of the Piece, and came running to the Shore with all ſpeed; but they were much ſurpriz'd when they heard

heard themſelves Hail'd in *Engliſh*. Upon the whole, they immediately ſent a Boat to fetch them over, and received them with a great deal of Joy.

Our Men pretended to be overjoy'd at finding them there, told them a long Story, that they came on Shore on the *Weſt* Side of the Iſland where, not far off, there were two *Engliſh* Ships; but that the Natives quarrelling with their Men, upon ſome Rudeneſs offer'd to their Women; and they being ſeparated from their Fellows, were oblig'd to fly, that the Natives had ſurrounded the reſt, and they believ'd had kill'd them all; that they wandred up to the top of the hill, intending to make Signals to their Ship, to ſend them ſome Help; when ſeeing ſome Ships, they believed ſome *Europeans* were there, and ſo came down to take Shelter; and they begg'd of them a Boat to carry them round the Cape to their Comrades; unleſs they would give them Leave to ſtay with them, and do as they did, which they were very willing to do.

This was all a made Story; but however, the Tale told ſo well, that they believ'd it thorowly, and received our Men very kindly, led them up to their Camp, and gave them ſome Victuals.

Our Men obſerv'd they had Victuals enough, and very good, as well Beef as Mutton; that is to ſay, of Goats Fleſh, which was excellent good; alſo Pork and Veal, and they were tolerable good Cooks too; for they found they had built ſeveral Furnaces and Boilers, which they had taken out of their Ships, and dreſs'd a vaſt Quantity of Meat at a Time: But they obſerv'd they had no Liquor; upon which, the Mate pull'd

a large Bottle of good Cordial Waters out of his Pocket, and gave it about as far as it would go, and ſo did two others of the Men which their new Landlords took very kindly.

They ſpent good Part of the firſt Day in looking about them, ſeeing the Manner of the Pyrates Living there, and their Strength; and ſoon perceived that they were indeed but in a ſorry Condition every Way, except that they had Cattle and Fleſh Meat ſufficient. They had a good Platform of Guns indeed, and a covered Place palliſado'd round where they lodg'd their Ammunition. But as for Fortifications to the Landward they had none, except a double Palliſado round their Camp, and a ſort of a Bank thrown up within to fire from, and ſtand covered from the Enemies Lances, which was all they had to fear from the Natives. They had no Bread but what they made of Rice, and the Store they had of that was very ſmall: They told our Men indeed, that they had two Ships Abroad, who they expected back every Day with a Quantity of Rice, and what elſe they could get; eſpecially with ſome Arack, which they were to Trade for with the *Arabian* Merchants, or take it by Force, which ſhould firſt offer.

Our Men pretended to like their Way of living mighty well, and talk'd of ſtaying with them, if they would let them, and thus they paſs'd the firſt Day of Converſation.

Our Men had two Tents or Hutts given them to lodge in, and Hammocks hung in the Hutts very agreeably, being ſuch I ſuppoſe as belong'd to ſome of their Company that were dead, or were out upon Adventure, here they

ſlept very ſecure, and in the Morning walk'd about, as Strangers might be ſuffer'd to do to look about them, but my new Manager's Eye was chiefly here upon two Things, 1*ſt.* to ſee if they had any Shipping for our Purpoſe, and 2*ly.* to ſee, if he could pitch upon one Man more particular than the reſt, to enter into ſome Confidence with, and it was not long before he found an Opportunity for both, the Manner was thus;

He was walking by himſelf, having ordered his other Men to ſtraggle away, two and two, this way and that, as if they had not minded him, tho' always to keep him in Sight, I ſay, he walk'd by himſelf towards that Part of the Creek, where, as was ſaid, three of their biggeſt Ships lay by the Walls, and when he came to the Shore right againſt them, he ſtood ſtill looking at them very earneſtly, while he was here, he obſev'd a Boat put off from One of them, with four Oars and one Sitter onely, who they ſet on ſhore juſt by him, and then put off again; the Perſon, who they ſet on ſhore, was it ſeems, One, who had been with our Men the evening before, but having ſome particular Office on board one of thoſe Ships, lay on board every Night with about 10 or 12 Men, juſt to watch and guard the Ship, and ſo came on Shore in the Morning, as is uſual in Men of War lay'd up.

As ſoon as he ſaw our Man, he knew him, and ſpoke very familiarly to him, and ſeeing he was looking ſo earneſtly at the Ship, he ask'd him, if he would go on board, our Man faintly declin'd it, as on purpoſe to be ask'd again, and upon juſt as much farther preſſing as

as was ſufficient to ſatisfie him, that the Gunner, for that was his Office, was in earneſt, he yeilded, ſo the Gunner call'd back the Boat, and they went on board.

Our Man view'd the Ship very particularly, and pretended to like every Thing he ſaw, but, after ſome Converſation, asks him this home Queſtion, namely, why they did not go to Sea, and ſeek Purchaſe, having ſo many good Ships at their Command; he ſhook his Head, and told him very frankly, that they were in no Condition to undertake any thing, for that they were a Crew of unreſolv'd divided Rogues; that they were never two Days of a Mind, that they had no Body to command, and therefore no Body to obey; that ſeveral Things had been offer'd, but nothing concluded, that in ſhort they thought of nothing, but of ſhifting every one for themſelves, as well as they could.

My Mate reply'd, he thought it had been quite otherwiſe, and that made him tell them laſt Night, that he had an Inclination to ſtay with them; I heard you ſay ſo, ſaid the Gunner, and it made me ſmile; I thought in my ſelf, that you would be of another Mind, when you knew us a little better, for in a Word ſaid he, if they ſhould agree to lend you a Boat to go back to your Ship, they would go together by the Ears, about who ſhould go with you, for not a Man of them, that went with you, would ever come back again hither, if your Captain would take them on board, tho' the Terms were to be hang'd, when they came to *England*.

My

My Mate knew that this was my Opinion before, but he was realy of another Mind himſelf, till he ſaw things, and till he talk'd with this Gunner, and this put new Things in his Head; ſo he entertain'd the Gunner with a Scheme of his own, and told him, if it was ſo as he related it, and that he had really a mind to come off from that Gang, he believ'd, that he could put him in a way how to do it to his Advantage, and to take a Set of his People with him, if he could pick out ſome of them that might be depended upon.

The Gnnner reply'd, that he could pick out a Set of very brave Fellows, good Seamen, and moſt of them ſuch, as having been forc'd into the Pyrates Ships, were drag'd into that wicked Life they had lived, not onely againſt their Conſciences, but by a meer Neceſſity to ſave their Lives, and that they would be glad at any Price to come off: The Mate ask'd him, how many ſuch he could anſwer for, he told him above a hundred; upon this the Mate told him the Circumſtances we were in, the Voyage we were upon, that we were a Letter of *Mart* Ship of ſuch a Force, but that we were over mann'd and double ſtor'd, in hopes of getting a good Ship upon our Cruiſe, to man out of the other, that we had been diſappointed, and had only got the Sloop or Brigantine which we bought, as before, at the Cape, that if he could perſwade the Men, to ſell us one of their Ships, we would pay them for it in ready Money, and perhaps entertain 100 of their Men into the Bargain.

The Gunner told him, he would propoſe it to them, and added in poſitive Terms, that he

he knew it would be readily accepted, and that he ſhould take which of the three Ships I pleas'd; the Mate then deſir'd, that he would lend them his Shallop to go on board our Ship, to acquaint me with it, and bring back ſufficient Orders to treat; he told him, he would not only do that, but before I could be ready to go, he would propoſe it to the chief Men that he had his Eye upon, and would have their Conſent, and that then he would go along with him on board to make a Bargain.

This was as well as our Mate could expect, and the Gunner had either ſo much Authority among them, or the Men were ſo forward to ſhift their Station in the World, that the Gunner came again to our Mate in leſs than two hours, with an Order, ſign'd by about ſixteen of their Officers, empowering him to ſell us the Ship, which the Gunner was on board of, and to allot ſo many Guns, and ſuch a Proportion of Ammunition to her, as was ſufficient, and to give the Work of all their Carpenters for ſo many Days, as were neceſſary to repair her, Calk, and grave her, and put her in Condition to go to Sea.

She was a *Spaniſh* built Ship, where they had her, the Gunner ſaid he did not know; but ſhe was a very ſtrong tight Ship, and a pretty good Sailor. We made her carry two and thirty Guns, tho' ſhe had not been uſed to carry above twenty-four.

The Gunner being thus impower'd to treat with my Mate, came away in their Shallop, and brought the ſaid Gunner and and two more of their Officers with him and eight Seamen. The Gunner and I ſoon made a Bargain for the Ship,

Ship, which I bought for five thouſand Pieces of Eight, moſt of it in *Engliſh* Goods, ſuch as they wanted; for they were many of them almoſt naked of Clothes; and as for other Things they had ſcarce a pair of Stockings or Shoes among them. When our Bargain was made, and the Mate had related all the Particulars of the Conference he had had with the Gunner, we came to talk of the People who were to go with us: The Gunner told us that we might indeed have good Reaſon to ſuſpect a Gang of Men who had made themſelves infamous all over the World by ſo many Pyracies and wicked Actions: But if I would put ſo much Confidence in him, he would aſſure me, that as he ſhould have the Power in his Hands to pick and chuſe his Men, ſo he would anſwer Body for Body for the Fidelity of all the Men he ſhould chuſe; and that moſt, if not all of them, would be ſuch as had been taken by Force out of other Ships, or wheedl'd away when they were drunk: And in a Word, he told me, there never was a Ship-load of ſuch Penitents went to Sea together as he would bring us: when he had ſaid ſo, he began to move me that I would pleaſe to give him the ſame Poſt which he held in the Ship; *(viz.)* of Gunner, which I promiſed him; and then he deſir'd I would permit him to ſpeak with me in Private; I was not at firſt very free to it, but he having conſented to let the Mate and Captain *Merlotte* be preſent, I yielded.

When all the reſt were withdrawn, he told me, that having been five Years in the Pyrates Service, as he might call it, and being obliged to do as they did, I might be ſure he had ſome ſmall

Share

Share in the Purchaſe; and however, he had come into it againſt his Will, yet as he had been oblig'd to go with them, he had made ſome Advantage; and that being reſolv'd to leave them, he had a good while ago pack'd up ſome of the beſt of what he had got, to make his Eſcape, and begg'd I would let him depoſite it with me as a Security for his Fidelity. Upon this, he order'd a Cheſt to be taken out of the Shallop, and brought into my great Cabbin; and beſides this, gave me out of his Pocket, a Bag ſeal'd up, the Contents of which, I ſhall ſpeak of hereafter.

The Shallop return'd the next Day, and I ſent back the Mate with my Long Boat and twenty four Men, to go and take Poſſeſſion of the Ship, and appointed my Carpenter to go and ſee to the Repairs that were neceſſary to be done to her: And ſome Days after, I ſent Captain *Merlotte* with the *Supra Cargo* in our Sloop, to go and ſecure the Poſſeſſion, and to cover the Retreat of any of the Men that might have a Mind to come away, and might be oppos'd by the reſt: And this was done at the Requeſt of the Gunner, who foreſaw there might be ſome Squabble about it.

They ſpent ſix Weeks and ſome odd Days in fitting out this Ship, occaſioned by the want of a convenient place to lay her on Shore in, which they were oblig'd to make with a great deal of Labour, however, ſhe was compleatly fitted up: When ſhe was fitted, they laid in a good Store of Proviſions, tho' not ſo well cur'd as to laſt a great while; One of the beſt Things we got a Recruit of here, was Casks, which *as before* we greatly wanted, and which their Coopers aſſiſted us to trim, ſeaſon, and fit up.

As

As to Bread, we had no Help from them; for they not only had none but what they made of Rice, but they had no ſufficient Store of that, as I have hinted before.

But we had more to do yet: For when the Ship was fitted up, and our Men had the Poſſeſſion of her, they were ſurpriz'd one Morning on a ſudden, with a moſt horrible Tumult among the Pyrates; and had not our Brigantine been at hand, (as above) to ſecure the Poſſeſſion, I believe they had taken the Ship from our Men again, and perhaps have came down with her and their two Sloops, and have attack'd us. The Caſe was this,

The Gunner, who was a punctual Fellow to his Word, reſolv'd that none of the Men ſhould go in the Ship, but ſuch as he had ſingl'd out; and they were ſuch, as were generally Men taken out of Merchants Ships, by Force, as before: But when he came to talk to the Men of who and who ſhould go, and ſtay; truly they wou'd all go, to a Man, there was not a Man of them wou'd ſtay behind; and, in a Word, they fell out about it, to that Degree, that they came to Blows, and the Gunner was forced to fly for it, with about twenty two Men that ſtood to him, and ſix or ſeven were wounded in the Fray, whereof two died.

The Gunner being thus driven to his Shifts, made down to the Shore to his Boat, but the Rogues were too nimble for him, and had got to his Boat before him, and prepar'd to man her and two more, to go on Board and ſecure the Ship: In this Diſtreſs, the Gunner, who had taken Sanctuary in the Woods at about a Mile diſtance, but unhappily above the Camp, ſo that the

the Platform of Guns was between him and the Ship, had no Remedy, but to ſend one of his Men who ſwam very well, to take a Compaſs round behind the Pyrates Camp, and come to the Water ſide below the Camp and Platform, ſo to take the Water and ſwim on Board the Ship, which lay near a League below their ſaid Camp, and give our Men Notice of what had happened, to warn them to ſuffer none of their Men to come on Board, unleſs the Gunner was with them, and if poſſible, to ſend a Boat on Shore to fetch off the Gunner and his Men, who were following by the ſame way, and would be at the ſame place, and make a Signal to them to come for him.

Our Men had ſcarce receiv'd this Notice, when they ſaw a Boat full of Men put off from the Platform, and row down under Shore towards them: But as they reſolv'd not to ſuffer them to come on Board, they call'd to them by a Speaking Trumpet, and told them they might go back again, for they ſhould not come on Board, nor any other Boat, unleſs the Gunner was on Board.

They row'd on for all that, when our Men call'd to them again, and told them, if they offer'd to put off, in order to come on Board, or in ſhort, to row down Shore any farther than a little Point which our Man nam'd, and which was juſt a head of them, they would fire at them: Well, they row'd on for all this, and that tho' they were paſt the Point; which our Men ſeeing, they immediately let fly a Shot, but fir'd a little a head of them, ſo as not to hit the Boat, and this brought them to a ſtop; ſo they lay upon their Oars a while, as if they were conſidering what to do; when our Men perceiv'd two Boats more come off from the Platform likewiſe, full of

of Men, and rowing after the firſt. Upon this, they call'd again to the firſt Boat with their Speaking Trumpet, and told them if they did not all go immediately on Shore, they would ſink the Boat. They had no Remedy, ſeeing our Men reſolv'd, and that they lay open to the Shot of the Ship; ſo they went on Shore accordingly, and then our Men fir'd at the empty Boat, till they ſplit her in Pieces, and made her uſeleſs to them.

Upon this firing, our Brigantine, which lay about two Leagues off in the Mouth of a little Creek, on the *South* of that River, weigh'd immediately, and ſtood away to the opening of the Road where the Ship lay, and the Tide of Flood being ſtill running in, they drove up towards the Ship for her Aſſiſtance, and came to an Anchor about a Cables Length a head of her, but within Piſtol ſhot of the Shore; at the ſame time ſending two and thirty of her Men on Board the great Ship to re-inforce the Men on Board, who were but ſixteen in Number.

Juſt at this time, the Gunner and his twenty one Men, who heard the firing, and had quickened their Pace, tho' they had a great Compaſs to fetch, thro' Woods and untrod Paths, and ſome Luggage to carry too, were come to the Shore, and made the Signal, which our Men in the Ship obſerving, gave Notice to the Officer of the Brigantine to fetch them on Board, which he did very ſafely; by the way, as the Officer afterwards told us, moſt of their Luggage conſiſted in Money, with which it ſeems every Man of them was very well furniſh'd, having ſhared their Wealth at their firſt coming on Shore: As for Clothes, they had very few, and thoſe all in Rags;

Rags; and as for Linnen, they had ſcarce a Shirt among them all, or Linnen enough to have made a white Flag for a Truce, if they had had Occaſion for it: In ſhort, a Crew ſo rich and ſo ragged, were hardly ever ſeen before.

The Ship was now pretty well mann'd, for the Brigantine carried the Gunner and his twenty one Men on Board her; and the Tide by this time being ſpent, ſhe immediately unmoor'd, and loos'd her Top Sails, *which, as it happen'd, had been bent to the Yards two Days before*, ſo with the firſt of the Ebb, ſhe weigh'd and fell down about a League farther, by which ſhe was quite out of Reach of the Platform, and rid in the open Sea; and the Brigantine did the ſame.

But by this Means, they miſs'd the Occaſion of the reſt of the Gunner's Men, who having got together to the Number of between ſeventy and eighty, had follow'd him and come down to the Shore, and made the Signals, but were not underſtood by our Ship, which put the poor Men to great Difficulties; for they had broken away from the reſt by Force, and had been purſued half a Mile by the whole Body, and particularly at the Entrance into a very thick, woody place, were ſo hard put to it, that they were oblig'd to make a deſperate ſtand, and fire at their old Friends, which had exaſperated them to the laſt Degree. But as the Caſe of theſe Men was deſperate, they took an effectual Method for their own Security, of which I ſhall give a farther Account preſently.

The general Body of the Pyrates were now up in Arms, and the new Ship was, as it were, in open War with them, or at leaſt they had declar'd War againſt it: But as they had been diſappointed

in their Attempt to force it, and found they were not ſtrong enough at Sea to attack it, they ſent a Flag of Truce on Board. Our Men admitted them to come to the Ship ſide, but as my Mate, who now had the Command, knew them to be a Gang of deſperate Rogues that would attempt any thing, tho' never ſo raſh, he order'd that none of them ſhould come on Board the Ship, except the Officer and two more, who gave an Account that they were ſent to treat with us. So we call'd them the Ambaſſadors.

When they came on Board, they expoſtulated very warmly with my new Agent the ſecond Mate, that our Men came in the Poſture of Friends, and of Friends too in Diſtreſs, and had receiv'd Favours from them, but had abuſed the Kindneſs, which had been ſhewn them; that they had bought a Ship of them, and had had Leave and Aſſiſtance to fit her up and furniſh her; but had not paid for her, or paid for what Aſſiſtance and what Proviſions had been given to them: And that now to compleat all, their Men had been partially and unfairly treated, and when a certain Number of Men had been granted us, an inferior Fellow a Gunner was ſet to call ſuch and ſuch Men out, juſt who he pleaſed, to go with us; whereas the whole Body ought to have had the appointing who they wou'd or wou'd not give Leave to, to go in the Ship: That when they came in a peaceable manner to have demanded Juſtice, and to have treated amicably of theſe Things, our Men had denied them Admittance, had committed Hoſtilities againſt them, had fir'd at their Men and ſtav'd their Boat, and had afterward receiv'd on Board their Deſerters, all

contrary

contrary to the Rules of Friendſhip. And in all theſe Caſes they demanded Satisfaction.

Our new Commander was a ready Man enough, and he anſwer'd all their Complaints with a great deal of Gravity and Calmneſs: He told them, that it was true we came to them as Friends, and had receiv'd friendly Uſage from them, which we had not in the leaſt diſhonour'd; but that as Friends in Diſtreſs, we had never pretended to be, and really were not; for that we were neither in Danger of any thing, or in Want of any thing; that as to Proviſions, we were ſtrong enough, if need were, to procure our ſelves Proviſions in any part of the Iſland, and had been ſeveral times ſupplied from the Shore by the Natives, for which we had always fully ſatisfied the People who furniſh'd us; and that we ſcorn'd to be ungrateful for any Favour we ſhould have receiv'd, much leſs to abuſe it, or them for it.

That we had paid the full Price of all the Proviſions we had receiv'd, and for the Work that had been done to the Ship, that what we had bargain'd for, as the Price of the Ship, had been paid, as far as the Agreement made it due, and that what remain'd, was ready to be paid as ſoon as the Ship was finiſhed, which was our Bargain.

That as to the People who were willing to take Service with us, and enter themſelves on Board, it is true, that the Gunner and ſome other Men offered themſelves to us, and we had accepted of them, and we thought it was our part to accept or not to accept of ſuch Men as we thought fit. As for what was among themſelves, that we had nothing to do with; that if we had been publickly warn'd by them not to have entertain'd

any of their Men, but with Conſent of the whole Body, then indeed we ſhould have had Reaſon to be cautious; otherwiſe, we were not in the leaſt concern'd about it. That it is true, we refuſed to let their Boats come on Board us, being aſſured that they came in a hoſtile manner, either to take away the Men by Force, which had been entred in our Service, or perhaps even to ſeize the Ship it ſelf; and why elſe was the firſt Boat follow'd by two more full of Men, arm'd and prepar'd to attack us; that we not only came in a friendly manner to them, but reſolv'd to continue in Friendſhip with them, if they thought fit to uſe us as Friends; but that conſidering what part of the World we were in, and what their Circumſtances were, they muſt allow us to be upon our Guard, and not put our ſelves in a Condition to be uſed ill.

While he was talking thus with them in the Cabbin, he had ordered a Can of Flip to be made, and given their Men in the Boat, and every one a Dram of the Bottle, but would not ſuffer them to come on board; however one or two of them got leave to get in at one of the Ports, and got between Decks among our Men; here they made terrible Complaints of their Condition, and begg'd hard to be entertain'd in our Service; they were full of Money, and gave twenty or thirty Pieces of Eight among our Men, and by this Preſent prevail'd for two Men to ſpeak to my Mate, who appear'd as Captain to take the Boat's Crew on board; the Mate very gravely told the two Ambaſſadors of it, and told them, that ſeeing they were come with a Flag of Truce, he would not ſtop their Men, without their

their Consent, but the Men being so earnest, he thought, they would do better not to oppose them; the Ambassadors, as I call them, oppos'd it however vehemently, and at last desir'd to go and talk with the Men, which was granted them readily; When they came into their Boat, their Men told them plainly, that *One and all* they would enter themselves with their Country Men, that they had been forc'd already to turn Pyrates, and they thought, they might very justly turn honest Men again by Force, if they could not get Leave to do it peaceably; and that in short, they would go on Shore no more; that if the Ambassadors desir'd it, they would set them on Shore with the Boat, but as for themselves, they would go along with the new Captain.

When the Ambassadors saw this, they had no more to do, but to be satisfied, and so were set on Shore, where they desir'd, and their Men staid on Board.

During this Transaction, my Mate had sent a full Account to me of all that had pass'd, and had desir'd me to come on board, and give farther Directions in all that was to come; so I took our *Supra Cargo* and Captain *Merlotte* along with me, and some more of our Officers, and went to them; it was my Lot to come on board, just when those famous Ambassadors were talking with my Mate, so I heard most of what they had to say, and heard the Answer my Mate gave them, as above, which was extremely to my Satisfaction; nor did I interrupt him, or take upon me hnyAuthority, tho' he would very submissively aave had me shewn my self, as Captain, but I

bid him go on, and ſat down, as not concern'd in the Affair at all.

After the Ambaſſadors were gone, the firſt thing I did, was, in the Preſence of all the Company, and having before had the Opinion of thoſe I brought with me, to tell my ſecond Mate, how well we were all ſatisfi'd with his Conduct, and to declare him, Captain of the Ship, that he was in; only demanding his ſolemn Oath, to be under Orders of the great Ship, as Admiral; and to carry on no ſeparate Intereſt from us, which he thankfully accepted, and to give him his Due, as faithfully perform'd, all the reſt of our very long Voyage, and thro' all our Adventures.

It was upon my ſeeming Interceſſion, that he gave Conſent to the Boat's Crew, who brought the Ambaſſadors, to remain in our Service, and ſet their Stateſmen on ſhore; and in fine, I told him, that as far as about one hundred and fifty, or two hundred Men, he ſhould entertain who he thought fit; thus having ſettl'd all things in the Ship to our Satisfaction, we went back to our great Ship the next day.

I had not been many hours on board our Ship, but I was ſurprz'd with the fireing of three Muſquets from the Shore; we wondred what ſhould be the meaning of it, knowing, that it was an unuſual Thing in that Place, where we knew the *Natives* of the Country had no Fire-Arms, ſo we knew not what to make of it, and therefore took no Notice of it, other than as I ſay, to wonder at it; about half an hour after that, we heard three Muſquets more, and ſtill not knowing any thing of the Matter, we made them no Return to the Signal; ſome Time after, three Muskets were fir'd again, but all was one, we took no

Notice,

Notice, for we knew nothing, of what Return was to be made to it.

When Night came on, we obſerv'd two great Fires upon two ſeveral Hills,on that Part of the Shore, oppoſite to us, and after that, three Rockets were fir'd, ſuch as they were, but they went off ill; I ſuppoſe their Gunner was ill provided for ſuch Things, but all ſignified nothing; we would ha' made any Return to them, that had been to be underſtood, but we knew nothing of any agreed Signal; however I reſolv'd, that in the Morning I would ſend a Boat on Shore, well mann'd, to learn if poſſible, what the Meaning of all this was; and accordingly in the Morning, I ſent our long Boat and Shallop on Shore, with two and thirty Men in them both, to get Intelligence; ordering them if poſſible, to ſpeak with ſome Body, before they went on Shore, and know, how things ſtood; that then, if it was a Party of the Pyrates, they ſhould, by no means, come near them, but parley at a Diſtance, till they knew, what the Meaning of it all was.

As ſoon as my Men came near the Shore, they ſaw plainly,that it was a Body of near an hundred of the Pyrates, but ſeeing them ſo ſtrong, they ſtood off, and would not come nearer, nor near enough, to parly with them, upon this the Men on Shore, got one of the Iſlanders Canvas Boats, or rather, Boats, made of Skins, which are but ſorry ones at beſt, and put off with two Men, to manage the Sail, and one Sitter, and two Paddles for Oars, and away they came toward us, carrying a Flag of Truce, that is to ſay, an old white Rag; how they came to ſave ſo much Linnen among them all, was very hard to ſay.

Our Men could do no leſs, than receive their Amdaſſador, and a Flag of Truce gave no Shaddow of Apprehenſion, eſpecially conſidering the Figure they made, and that the Men on Shore had no other Boats to ſurprize or attack us with; ſo they lay by upon their Oars,till they came up, when they ſoon underſtood who they were; *viz.* that they were the Gunner's ſelected Men, that they came too late, to have their Signal perceiv'd from the other Ship, which was gone out of ſight of the Place they were directed to; that they had with great Difficulty, and five Days and Nights marching,got thro' a woody and almoſt unpaſſable Country to come at us; that they had fetch'd a Circuit of near an hundred Miles, to avoid being attack'd by their Comrades, and that they were purſued by them, with their whole Body, and therefore they beg'd to be taken on board; they ſaid if they ſhould be overtaken by their Comrades, they ſhould be all cut in Peices, for that they had broke away from them by Force, and moreover had been oblig'd at the firſt of their Purſuit, to face about, and fire among them, by which they had kill'd ſix or ſeven of them, and wounded others, and that they had ſworn, they would give them no Quarter, if they could come fairly up with them.

Our Men told them, they muſt be contented to remain on Shore, where they were, for ſome Time, for that they could do nothing, till they had been on board, and acquainted their Captain with all the particulars, ſo they came back immediately to me for Orders.

As to me, I was a little uneaſy at the Thoughts of taking them on board; I knew they were a Gang of Pyrates at beſt, and what they might do I knew

I knew not, but I ſent them this Meſſage, that tho' all their Tale might be very good for ought I knew, yet that I muſt take ſo much Time, as to ſend an Expreſs to the Captain of the other Ship, to be inform'd of the Faith of it; and that if he brought a ſatisfactory Anſwer, I would ſend for them all on board.

This was very uncomfortable News to them, for they expected to be ſurrounded every Hour by their Comrades, from whom they were to look for no Mercy; however ſeeing no Remedy, they reſolv'd to march about twenty Miles farther *South*, and lie by in a Place near the Sea, where we agreed to ſend to them; concluding, that their Comrades not finding them near the place where we lay, would not imagine, they could be gone farther that way; As they gueſs'd, ſo it prov'd, for the Pyrates came to the Shore, where they ſaw Tokens enough of their having been there, but concluded, that ſeeing they could not be found there, they were all gone on board our Ship.

The Wind proving contrary, it was no leſs than four Days before our Boat came back, ſo that the poor Men were held in great Suſpence: But when they returned, they brought the Gunner with them, who had ſelected thoſe Men from all the reſt for our new Ship; and who, when he came, gave me a long Account of them, and what Care he had taken to pick them out for our Service, delivering me alſo a Letter from my new Captain to the ſame Purpoſe: Upon all which concurring Circumſtances, we concluded to take them on board; ſo we ſent our Boats for them, who at twice brought them all on board, and very ſtout honeſt Fellows they were.

When

When they had been on board ſome Days and refreſh'd themſelves, I concluded to ſend them all on board the new Ship; but upon Advice, I reſolved to ſend ſixty of my own Men joyn'd to forty of theſe, and keep thirty four of them on board my Ship; for their Number was juſt ſeventy four, which with the Gunner and his twenty one Men, and the ſixteen Men who came with the worthy Embaſſadors, and would not go on Shore again, made one hundred and twelve Men; and as we all thought were enough for us, tho' we took in between forty and fifty more afterwards.

We were now ready to go to Sea, and I cauſed the new Ship and the Brigantine to come away from the Place where they lay and joyn us; which they did, and then we unloaded Part of our Proviſions and Ammunition; of which, as I obſerv'd at firſt, we had taken in double Quantity; and having furniſhed the new Ship, with a Proportion of all Things neceſſary, we prepar'd for our Voyage.

I ſhould here give a long Accuont of a ſecond deviliſh Conſpiracy, which my two remaining Priſoners had form'd among the Men; which was to betray the new Ship to the Pyrates: But 'tis too long a Story to put in here; nor did I make it publick among the Ship's Company: But as it was only, *as it were*, laid down in a Scheme, and that they had no Opportunity to put it in Practice, I thought it was better to make as little Noiſe of it as I could. So I order'd my new Captain, *for it was he who diſcovered it to me*, to puniſh them in their own Way, and without taking Notice of their new Villanies, to ſet them on Shore, and leave them to take their Fate

with

with a Set of Rogues, who they had intended to joyn with, and whose Profession was likely, some Time or other, to bring them to the Gallows. And thus I was rid of two incorrigible Mutineers; what became of them afterwards I never heard.

We were now a little Fleet, (*viz.*) two large Ships and a Brigantine, well mann'd, and furnish'd with all sorts of Necessaries for any Voyage or any Enterprize that was fit for Men in our Posture to undertake; and particularly here, I made a full Design of the whole Voyage, to be again openly declared to the Men, and had them ask'd, One by One, if they were willing and resolv'd to undertake it, which they all very chearfully answered in the Affirmative.

Here we had Opportunity to furnish our selves with a vast Stock of excellent Beef, which as I said before, we cur'd with little or no Salt, by drying it in the Sun; and I believe we laid in such a Store, that in all our three Vessels we had near an hundred and fifty Tun of it; and it was of excellent Use to us, and serv'd us thro' the whole Voyage: There was little else to be had in this Place that was fit to be carried to Sea; except, that as there was plenty of Milk, some of our Men that were more dexterous than others, made several large Cheeses; nor were they very far short of *English* Cheese, only that we were but indifferent Dairy-Folks: Our Men made some Butter also, and salted it to keep, but it grew rank and oily, and was of no Use to us.

It was on the fifteenth of *December* that we left this Place, a Country fruitful, populous, full of Cattle, large and excellent good Beef, and

and very fat; and the Land able to produce all Manner of good Things; but the People wild, naked, black, barbarous, perfectly untractable, and insensible of any State of Life being better than their own.

We stood away toward the Shore of *Arabia*, till we past the Line, and came into the Latitude of eighteen Degrees *North*, and then stood away *East*, and *E.* by *N.* for the *English* Factories of *Surrat*, and the Coast of *Malabar*; not that we had any Business there, or design'd any, only that we had a mind to take on Board a Quantity of Rice, if we could come at it; which at last we effected by a *Portuguese* Vessel, which we met with at Sea, bound to *Goa* from the Gulph of *Persia*. We chas'd her and brought her too indeed, as if we resolv'd to attack and take the Ship; but finding a Quantity of Rice on Board, which was what we wanted, with a Parcel of Coffee; we took all the Rice, but paid the *Supra Cargo*, who was a *Persian* or *Armenian* Merchant, very honestly for the whole Parcel, his full Price, and to his Satisfaction: As for the Coffee we had no Occasion for it: We put in at several Ports on the *Indian* Coast for fresh Water, and fresh Provisions, but came near none of the Factories, because we had no mind to discover our selves; for tho' we were to sail thro' the very Center of the *India* Trade, yet it was perfectly without any Business among them. We met indeed on this Coast with some Pearl Fishers, who had been in the Mouth of the *Arabian* Gulph, and had a large Quantity of Pearl on Board. I would have traded with them for Goods, but they understood nothing but Money, and I refus'd to part with it: Upon which, the Fellows gave our *Supra*

Cargo ſome ſcurvy Language, which, tho' he did not well underſtand what they ſaid, yet he pretended to take it as a great Affront, and threatned to make Prize of their Barks, and Slaves of the Men; upon which, they grew very humble; and one of them, a *Malabar Indian*, who ſpoke a little *Engliſh*, ſpoke for them, that they would willingly trade with us for ſuch Goods as we had; whereupon I produced three Bales of *Engliſh* Cloth, which I ſhew'd them, would be of good Merchandiſe at *Gombaroon* in the Gulph, for that the *Perſians* made their long Veſts of ſuch Cloths.

In ſhort, for this Cloth, and ſome Money, we bought a Box of choice Pearls, which the Chief of them had pick'd out from the reſt for the *Portugueſe* Merchants at *Goa*; and which, when I came to *London*, was valued at two thouſand two hundred Pound Sterling.

We were near two Months on our Voyage from *Madagaſcar* to the Coaſt of *India*, and from thence to *Ceylon*, where we put in, on the *South Weſt* Part of the Iſland, to ſee what Proviſions we could get, and to take in a large Supply of Water. The People here we found willing to ſupply us with Proviſions; but withal, ſo ſharp, impoſing upon us their own Rates for every Thing; and withal, ſo falſe, that we were often provoked to treat them very rudely. However, I gave ſtrict Orders that they ſhould not be hurt upon any Occaſion; at leaſt, 'till we had fill'd all our Water Cask, and taken in what freſh Proviſions we could get, and eſpecially Rice, which we valued very much: But they provok'd us at laſt beyond all Patience; for they were ſuch Thieves when they were on Board, and ſuch treache-

treacherous Rogues when we were on Shore, that there was no bearing it; and two Accidents fell out upon this Occasion, which fully broke the Peace between us; one was on Board, and the other was on Shore, and both happened the same Day. The Case on Board was this; there came on Board us a small Boat, in which was eleven Men and three Boys, to sell us Roots, Yams, Mangoes, and such Stuff as it was frequent for them to do every Day; but this Boat having more Goods of that Kind than usual, they were longer than ordinary making their Market: While they were thus Chaffering on Board, one of them having wandred about the Ship, and pretending to admire every Thing he saw, and being gotten between Decks, was taken stealing a Pair of Shoes, which belong'd to one of the Seamen; the Fellow being stopt for his Theft, appear'd angry, raised a hideous skreaming Noise to allarm his Fellows; and at the same Time, having stolen a long Pair of Cissars, pull'd them out, and stabb'd the Man that had laid hold of him into the Shoulder, and was going to double his Blow, when the poor Fellow that had been wounded, having struck up his Heels and fallen upon him, had kill'd him, if I had not call'd to take him off, and bring the Theif up to me.

Upon this Order, they took up the *Barbarian*, and brought him up with the Shoes and the Cissars that he had stolen, and as the Fact was plain, and needed no Witnesses, I caused all the rest of them to be brought up also; and as well as we could, made them understand what he had done. They made pitiful Signs of Fear, least they should all be punished for his Crime, and particularly when they saw the Man, who he had wounded

wounded brought in; then they expected nothing but Death, and they made a sad Lementation and Howling, as if they were all to die immediately. It was not without a great deal of Difficulty that I found Ways to satisfy them, that noBody was to be punished but the Man that had committed the Fact; and then I caused him to be brought to the Geers, with a Halter about his Neck, and be soundly whipp'd; and indeed our People did scourge him severely from Head to Foot; and I believe, if I had not run my self to put an End to it, they had whipp'd him to Death.

When this Execution was over, they put him into their Boat and let them all go on Shore: But no sooner were they on Shore, but they raised a terrible Hubbub among all the Villages and Towns near them, and they were not a few, the Country being very Populous; and a vast Multitude of them came down to the Shore, staring at us, and making confused ugly Noises, and abundance of Arrows they shot at the Ship, but we rode too far from the Shore for them to do us any Hurt.

While this was doing, another Fray happen'd on Shore, where two of our Men Chaffering with an Islander and his Wife for some Fowls, they took his Money, or what else it was he was to give, and gave him Part of the Fowls, but they pretended the Woman should go and fetch the rest, while the Women was gone, three or four more of the same Sort came to the Man that was left, and talking a while together, seeing they were so many, and our Men but two, they began to take hold of the Fowls they had sold, and would take them away again; at which,

which, one of our Men ſtep'd up to the Fellow that had taken them up, and went to lay hold of him, but he was too nimble for him, and ran away and carried off the Fowls and the Money too. The Seamen was ſo enrag'd to be ſerv'd ſo, that he took up his Piece, for they had both Fire Arms with them, and fir'd immediately after him, and aim'd his Shot ſo luckily, that tho' the Fellow flew like the Wind, he ſhot him thro' the Head, and he drop'd down dead upon the Spot.

The reſt of them, tho' terribly frighted, yet ſeeing our Men were but two, and the Noiſe bringing twenty or thirty more immediately to them, attack'd our Men with their Lances, and Bows and Arrows; and in a Moment, there was a pitch'd Battle of two Men only againſt twenty or thirty, and their Number encreaſing too.

In ſhort, our Men ſpent their Shot freely among them as long as it laſted, and kill'd ſix or ſeven, beſides wounding ten or eleven more; and this cool'd their Courage, and they ſeem'd to give over the Battel; and our Men, whoſe Ammunition was almoſt ſpent, began to think of retreating to their Boat, which was near a Mile off, for they were very unhappily gotten from their Boat ſo far up the Country.

They made their Retreat pretty well for about half the Way, when, on a ſudden, they ſaw they were not purſued only, but ſurrounded, and that ſome of their Enemies were before them. This made them double their Pace, and ſeeing no Remedy, they reſolv'd to break thro' thoſe that were before them, who were about eleven or twelve: Accordingly, as ſoon as they came within Poſtol ſhot of them, one of our Men

having, for want of Shot, put almoſt a Handful of Gravel and ſmall Stones into his Piece, and fired among them, and the Gravel and Stones ſcattering, wounded almoſt all of them; for they being naked from the Waſte upwards, the leaſt Grain of Sand ſcratch'd and hurt them, and made them bleed if it did but touch them.

Being thus compleatly ſcar'd, and indeed more afraid than hurt, they all run away, except two who were really wounded with the Shot or Stones, and lay upon the Ground: Our Men let them lye, and made the beſt of their Way to their Boat; where, at laſt, they got ſafe, but with five hundred of the People at their Heels; their Fellows did not ſtay to fire from the Boat, but put off with all the Speed they could, for fear of their poiſon'd Arrows, and the Country People pour'd ſo many of their Arrows into the Boat after them, and aim'd them alſo ſo true, that two of our Men were hurt with them; but whether they were poiſon'd or no, our Surgeons cur'd them both.

We had enough of *Ceylon*, and having no Buſineſs to make ſuch a Kind of War as this muſt have been, in which we might have loſt, but could get nothing, we weigh'd and ſtood away to the *Eaſt*; what became of the Fellow that we laſh'd, we know not, but as he had but little Fleſh left on his Back, which was not mangled, and torn with our whipping him, and we ſuppoſe, they are but indifferent Surgeons, our People ſaid the Fellow could not live: and the Reaſon they gave for it, was becauſe they did not pickle him after it. Truly, they ſaid, that they would not be ſo kind to him as to pickle him: For tho' Pickling, that is to ſay, throwing

Salt and Vinegar on the Back after the whipping, be cruel enough, as to the Pain it is to the Patient, yet 'tis certainly the Way to prevent Mortification, and causes it to heal again with the more Ease.

We stood over from *Ceylon E. S. E.* cross the great Bay of *Bngal*, leaving all the Coast of *Coromandel*, and standing directly for *Anchin*, on the *North* Point of the great Island of *Sumatra*, and in the Latitude of six Degrees thirty one Minutes *North*.

Here we spread our *French* Colours, and coming to an Anchor, suffer'd none of our Men to go on Shore but Captain *Merlotte* and his *French* Men; and having nothing to do there, or any where else in the *Indian Seas*, but to take in Provisions and fresh Water, we staid but five Days; in which Time, we supply'd our selves with what the Place would afford; and pretending to be bound for *China*, we went on to the *South*, thro' the Streights of *Malacca*, between the Island of *Sumatra*, and the *Main* or *Isthmus* of *Malacca*.

We had here a very difficult passage, tho' we took two Pilots on Board at *Anchin*, who pretended to know the Streights perfectly well; twice we were in very great Danger of being lost, and once our *Madagascar* Ship was so entangled among Rocks and Currents, that we gave her up for lost, and twice she struck upon the Rocks, but she did but touch, and went clear.

We went several Times on Shore among the *Malayans*, as well on the Shore of *Malacca* it self, as on the Side of *Sumatra*: They are a fierce, cruel, treacherous, and mercilefs Crew of humane Devils as any I have met with on the Face of

of the whole Earth; and we had ſome Skirmiſhes with them, but not of any Conſequence: We made no Stay any where in this Streight, but juſt for freſh Water, and what other freſh Proviſions we could get, ſuch as Roots, Greens, Hogs and Fowls, of which they have Plenty and a great Variety: But nothing to be had but for ready Money; which our Men took ſo unkindly, and eſpecially their offering two or three Times to cheat them, and once to murther them; that after that, they made no Scruple to go on Shore a hundred or more at a Time, and plunder and burn what they could not carry off; till at laſt we began to be ſuch a Terror to them, that they fled from us wherever we came.

On the fifth of *March* we made the *Southermoſt* Point of the *Iſthmus* of *Mallacca*; and the Iſland, and Streights of *Sincapore*, famous for its being the great Outlet into the *Chineſe Sea*, and lying in the Latitude of one Degree fifteen Minutes *North* Latitude.

We had good Weather thro' theſe Streights, which was very much to our Comfort; the different Currents, and Number of little Iſlands, making it otherwiſe very dangerous, eſpecially to Strangers: We got by very good Luck, a *Dutch* Pilot ta carry us thro' this Streight, who was a very uſeful skilful Fellow, but withal ſo very impertinent and inquiſitive, that we knew not what to ſay to him nor what to do with him: At laſt he grew ſaucy and inſolent, and told our chief Mate, that he did not know but we might be Pyrates, or at leaſt Enemies to his Countrymen the *Dutch*; and if we would not tell him who we were, and whither we were bound, he would not Pilot us any farther.

This I thought very insolent, to a Degree beyond what was sufferable; and I bid the Boatswain put a Haller about the Fellow's Neck, and tell him, that the Moment he omitted to direct the Steerage as a Pilot, or the Moment the Ship came to any Misfortune, or struck upon any Rock, he should be truss'd up. The Boatswain, a rugged Fellow, provides himself with a Halter, and coming up to the Pilot, ask'd him, *What it was he wanted to be satisfied in?* The Pilot said, he desired to have a true Account whither we were going: *Why*, says the Boatswain, *we are a going to the Devil, and I shall send you before to tell him we are coming*; and with that, he pulls the Halter out of his Pocket, and puts it over his Head; and taking the other End of it in his Hand, *Come*, says the Boatswain, *come along with me; do you think we can't go thro' the Streight of* Sincapore *without your Help; I warrant you*, says he, *we will do without you.*

By this Time, you may suppose, the *Dutch* Man to be in a mortal Fright, and half choak'd too with being drag'd by the Throat with the Halter, and full heartily he begg'd for his Life: At Length, the Boatswain, who had pull'd him along a good Way, stopp'd, and the *Dutch* Man fell down on his Knees; but the Boatswain said, he had the Captain's Orders to hang him, and hang him he would, unless the Captain recall'd his Orders; but that he would stay so long, if any Body would go up to the Captain, and tell him what the *Dutch* Man said, and bring back an Answer.

I had no Design to hang the poor Fellow, you may be sure, and the Boatswain knew that well enough: However, I was resolv'd to humble him

him effectually, ſo I ſent back two Men to the Boatſwain; the firſt was to tell the Boatſwain aloud, that the Captain was reſolv'd to have the Fellow hang'd, for having been ſo impudent to threaten to run the Ship a-Ground: But then the ſecond, *who was to ſtay a little behind*, was to call out, as if he came ſince the firſt from me, and that I had been prevail'd with to pardon him, on his Promiſes of better Behaviour: This was all acted to the Life; for the firſt Meſſenger call'd aloud to the Boatſwain, that the Captain ſaid he would have the *Dutch* Man hang'd for a Warning to all Pilots, and to teach them not to inſult Men when they are in Difficulties, as the Midwives do Whores in Travel, and won't deliver them till they confeſs who is the Father.

The Boatſwain had the End of the Halter in his Hand all the while; *I told you ſo*, ſays he, *before*, *come*, *come along* MYNHEER, ſays he, *I ſhall quickly do your Work, and put you out of your Pain*; and then he dragg'd the poor Fellow along to the Main-maſt: By this Time the ſecond Meſſenger came in and delivered his Part of the Errand, and ſo the poor *Dutch* Man was put out of his Fright, and they gave him a Dram to reſtore him a little, and he did his Work very honeſtly afterwards.

And now we were got looſe again, being in the open Sea, which was what we were very impatient for before. We had now a long Run over that Part which we call the Sea of *Borneo*, and the upper Part of the *Indian Arches*, call'd ſo for its being full of Iſlands, like the *Archipelague* of the *Levant*. It was a long Run, but as we were to the *North* of the Iſlands, we had the more Sea-room; ſo we ſteer'd *Eaſt* half a

Point, one Way or other for the *Manilla's*, or *Phillipine* Iſlands; which was the true Deſign of our Voyage, and, perhaps, we were the firſt Ship that ever came to thoſe Iſlands freighted from *Europe* ſince the *Portugueſe* loſt their Footing there.

We put in on the *North* Coaſt of *Borneo* for freſh Water, and were civilly enough uſed by the Inhabitants of the Place, who brought us Roots, and Fruits of ſeveral Kinds, and ſome Goats, which we were glad of: We paid them in Trifles; ſuch as Knives, Ciſſars, Toys, and ſeveral Sorts of wrought Iron, Hatchets, Hammers, Glaſs-work, Looking-glaſſes, Drinking-glaſſes, and the like. From hence we went away, as I ſay, for the *Phillipine* Iſlands. We ſaw ſeveral Iſlands in our Way, but made no ſtop except once for Water, and arriv'd at *Manilla* the twenty ſecond of *May*, all our Veſſels in very good Condition, our Men healthy, and our Ships ſound; having met with very few contrary Winds, and not one Storm in the whole Voyage from *Madagaſcar*, having been ſeventeen Months and two Days on the Voyage from *England*.

When we came hither, we ſaluted the *Spaniſh* Flag, and came to an Anchor, carrying *French* Colours: Captain *Merlotte*, who now acted as Commander, ſends his Boat on Shore the next Day to the Governor with a Letter in *French* very reſpectful; and telling the Governor, that having the King of *France*'s Commiſſion, and being come into thoſe Seas, he hop'd, that for the Friendſhip which was between their Moſt Chriſtian and Catholick Majeſties, he ſhould be allow'd the Freedom of Commerce, and the Uſe of the Port; the like having been granted to his Moſt

Chriſtian

Chriſtian Majeſty's Subjects in all the Ports of *New Spain*, as well in the *Southern* as in the *Northern Seas*.

The *Spaniſh* Governor returned a very civil and obliging Anſwer, and immediately granted us to buy what Proviſions we pleaſed for our Supply, or any Thing elſe for our Uſe; but anſwered, that as for allowing any Exchange of Merchandizes, or giving Leave for *European* Goods to be brought on Shore there, that he was not empower'd to grant.

We made as if this Anſwer was ſatisfactory enough to us; and the next Morning, Captain *Merlotte* ſent his Boat on Shore with all *French* Sailors, and a Midſhip-man *French*, with a handſome Preſent to the Governor; conſiſting of ſome Bottles of *French* Wine, ſome Brandy, two Pieces of Fine Holland, two Pieces of *Engliſh* black Bays, one Piece of fine *French* Drugget, and five Yards of Scarlet Woollen Cloth.

This was two conſiderable a Preſent for a *Spaniard* to refuſe; and yet theſe were all *European* Goods, which he ſeem'd not to allow to come on Shore. The Governor let the Captain know, that he accepted his Preſent; and the Men who brought it, were very handſomely entertained by the Governor's Order, and had every one a ſmall Piece of Gold; and the Officer who went at their Head, had five Pieces of Gold given him: What Coin it was I could not tell, but I think it was a *Japan* Coin, and the Value ſomething leſs than a Piſtole.

The next Day the Governor ſent a Gentleman with a large Boat, and in it a Preſent to our Captain; containing two Cows, ten Sheep or Goats rather, for they were between both; a vaſt

Number of Fowls of ſeveral Sorts, and twelve great Boxes of Sweetmeats and Conſerves, which were indeed very valuable; and invited the Captain and any of his Attendants on Shore, offering to ſend Hoſtages on Board for our ſafe return; and concluding with his Word of Honour for our Safety, and free going back to our Ships.

The Captain received the Preſent with very great Reſpect, and indeed it was a very noble Preſent; for at the ſame Time a Boat was ſent to both the other Ships with Proviſions and Sweetmeats, in Proportion to the Bigneſs of the Veſſels. Our Captain cauſed the Gentleman who came with this Preſent, to have a fine Piece of Crimſon *Engliſh* Cloth given him ſufficient to make a Waſtecoat and Breeches of their Faſhion, with a very good Hat, two Pair of Silk Stockings, and two Pair of Gloves; and all his People had a Piece of Drugget given them ſufficient to make them the like Suit of Clothes; the Perſons who went to the other Ship, and to the Brigantine, had Preſents in Proportion.

This, in ſhort, was neither more or leſs than Trading and Bartering, tho' for the Grimace of it, we were, in a Manner, deny'd. The next Day the Captain went on Shore to viſit the Governor, and with him ſeveral of our Officers, and the Captain of the *Madagaſcar* Ship, formerly my ſecond Mate, and the Captain of the Brigantine. I did not go my ſelf for that Time, nor the *Supra Cargo*, becauſe whatever might happen, I would be reſerv'd on Board; beſides I did not care to appear in this Part of the Work.

The

The Captain went on Shore like a Captain, attended with his two Trumpeters, and the Ship firing eleven Guns at his going off. The Governor received him like himſelf, with prodigious State and Formality; ſending five Gentlemen and a Guard of Soldiers to receive them at their Landing, and to conduct them to his Palace: when they came there, they were entertained with the utmoſt Profuſion, and wonderful Magnificence, after the *Spaniſh* Manner; and they all had the Honour to dine with his Excellence, that is to ſay, all the Officers: At the ſame Time the Men were entertain'd very handſomely in another Houſe, and had very good Cheer: But it was obſerv'd, that they had very little Wine, except ſuch as we had ſent them; which the Governor excuſed; his Store, which he had yearly from *New Spain*, being ſpent; which Deficiency we ſupply'd the next Day, and ſent him a Quarter Cask of very good *Canary*, and a half Hogſhed of *Madera*; which was a Preſent ſo acceptable, that in ſhort, after this, we might do juſt as we pleaſed with him, and all his Men.

While they were thus converſing together, after Dinner, Captain *Merlotte* was made to underſtand, that tho' the Governer could not admit an open avow'd Trade, yet that the Merchants would not be forbid coming on Board our Ship, and Trading with us in ſuch Manner as we ſhould be very well ſatisfied with; after which, we ſhould be at no Hazard of getting the Goods we ſhould ſell, put on Shore; and we had an Experiment of this made in a few Days as follows.

When

When Captain *Merlotte* took his leave of the Governour, he invited his Excellence to come on board our Ship, with ſuch of his Attendants as he pleas'd to bring with him, and in like manner offered Hoſtages for his Return; the Governour accepted the Invitation, and with the ſame Generoſity ſaid, he would take his Parole of Honour given, as he was the King of *France's* Captain, and in the Name of his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty, and would come on board.

The Governour did not come to the Shore ſide with them, but ſtood in the Window of the Palace, and gave them his Hat and Leg at their going into their Boats, and made a Signal to the Platform, to fire eleven Guns at their Boats putting off.

Theſe were unuſual and unexpected Honours to us, who, but for this Stratagem of the *French* Commiſſion, had been declared Enemies: It was ſuggeſted to me here, that I might with great Eaſe ſurprize the whole Iſland, nay all the Iſlands, the Governour putting ſuch Confidence in us, that we might go on ſhore in the very Fort unſuſpected: But tho' this was true, and that we did play them a Trick at the *Rio de la Plata*, I could not bear the Thoughts of it here; beſides I had quite another Game to play, which alſo was more advantage to us and to our Voyage, than an Enterpriſe of ſo much Treachery could be to *England*, which alſo, we might not be able to ſupport from *England*, before the *Spaniards* might beat us out again from *Acapulco*, and then we might paſs our Time ill enough.

Upon the whole I reſolv'd to keep every Punctilio with the Governour very juſtly, and we found our Account in it preſently.

About

About three days afterwards we had Notice, that the Governour would make us a Viſit, and we prepared to entertain his Excellence with as much State as poſſible; by the way we had private Notice, that the Governour would bring with him ſome Merchants, who perhaps might lay out ſome Money, and buy ſome of our Cargo; nor was it without a ſecret Intimation, that even the Governour himſelf was concern'd in the Market that ſhould be made.

Upon this Intelligence, our *Supra Cargo* cauſed ſeveral Bales of *Engliſh* and *French* Goods to be brought up and open'd, and lay'd ſo in the Steerage and upon the Quarter Deck of the Ship, that the Governour and his Atttendants ſhould ſee them of courſe as they paſs'd by.

When the Boats came off from the ſhore, which we knew by their Fort firing elevenGuns as before, our Shipappear'd as fine as we could make her, having the *French* Flag at the main Top as Admiral, and Streamers and Penants at the Yard Arms, waſte Cloths out, and a very fine Awning over the Quarter Deck. When his Excellency entered the Ship, we fir'd one and twenty Guns, the *Madagaſcar* Ship fir'd the like Number, and the Brigantine fifteen, having loaded her Guns nimbly enough to fire twice.

As the Governour's Entertainment to us, was more Meat than Liquor, ſo we gave him more Liquor than Meat; for as we had ſeveral Sorts of very good Wines on board, we ſpar'd nothing to let him ſee, he was very welcome. After Dinner we brought a large Bowl of Punch upon the Table, which was a Liquor he did not underſtand at all: However to do him juſtice, he drank very moderately, and ſo did moſt of thoſe that were with him,

him. As to the Men that belong'd to his Retinue, I mean Servants and Attendants and the Crews of the Boats, we made ſome of them drunk enough.

While this was doing, we fonnd two Gentlemen of the Governour's Company, took Occaſion to leave the reſt and walk about the Ship, and in doing this, they ſeem'd as it were by chance to caſt their Eyes, upon our Bales of Cloth and Stuffs, Bays,Linnen, Silks, *&c*, and our *Supra Cargo* and they began to make Bargains apace, for he found they had not onely Money enough, but had abundance of other Things, which we were as willing to take as Money, and of which they had brought Specimens with them; as particularly Spices, ſuch as Cloves and Nutmegs, *China* Ware, Tea, Japan'd Ware, wrought Silks, raw Silk, and the like.

However our *Supra Cargo* dealt with them at preſent for Nothing but ready Money, and they paid all in Gold; the Price he made here, was to us indeed extravagant, tho' to them moderate, ſeeing they had been us'd to buy theſe Goods from the *Acapulco* Ships, which came in yearly, from whom, to be ſure, they bought dear enough. They bought as many Goods at this Time,as they paid the Value of fifteen thouſand Peices of Eight for,but all in Gold by Weight.

As for carrying them on Shore, the Governour being with them, no Officer had any Thing to ſay to them; it ſeems, they were carryed on Shore as Preſents, made by us to the Governour and his Retinue.

The next Day three *Spaniſh* Merchants came on board us, early in the Morning before it was Light, and deſir'd to ſee the *Supra Cargo*; they brought

brought with them a Box of Diamonds and ſome Pearl, and a great Quantity of Gold, and to work they went with our Cargo, and I thought once, they would have bonght the whole Ship'sLoading; but they contented themſelves to buy about the Value of two and twenty thouſand Peices of Eight, which, I ſuppoſe, might coſt in *England*, one ſixth Part of the Money, or hardly ſo much. We had ſome Difficulty about the Diamonds, becauſe we did not underſtand them very much, but our *Supra Cargo* ventur'd upon them at eight thouſand Peices of Eight, and took the reſt in Gold: They deſir'd to ſtay on Board till the next Night, when, ſoon after it was dark, a ſmall Sloop came on Board, and took in all their Goods, and as we were told, carryed them away to ſome other Iſland.

The ſame Day and before theſe Merchants were gone, came a large Shallop on Board with a ſquare Sail, towing after her a great heavy Boat, which had a Deck, but ſeem'd to have been a large Ship's long Boat, built into a Kind of Yatch, but ill maſted, and ſail'd heavily. In theſe two Boats they brought ſeven Tun of Cloves in Matts, ſome Cheſts of *China* Ware, ſome Pieces of *China* Silks, of ſeveral Sorts, and a great Sum of Money alſo.

In ſhort, they ſold ſo cheap and bought ſo dear, that our *Supra Cargo* declar'd, he would ſell the whole Cargo for Goods, if they would bring them, for by his Calculation, he had diſpos'd of as many Goods, as he receiv'd the Value of one hundred thouſand Peices of Eight for, all which, by his Accounts did not amount to, firſt Coſt, above three thouſand Pounds Sterling in *England*. Our Ship was now an open Fair, for two or three

Days after came the Veſſel back, which went away in the Night, and with them a *Chineſe* Jonque, and ſeven or eight *Chineſes* or *Japanners*; ſtrange, ugly, ill looking Fellows they were, but brought a *Spaniard* to be their Interpreter, and they came to Trade alſo, bringing with them ſeventy great Cheſts of *China* Ware, exceeding fine, twelve Cheſts of *China* Silks of ſeveral Sorts, and ſome laquer'd Cabinets very fine. We dealt with them for all thoſe, for our *Supra Cargo* ſwept all clean, and took every thing they brought. But they were more difficult in the Goods, for as for Bayes, and Druggets, and ſuch Goods, they would not meddle with them; but our fine Cloths and ſome Bales of Linnen they bought very freely. So we unloaded their Veſſel, and put our Goods on Board; we took a good Sum of Money of them beſides, but whither they went we knew not, for they both came and went in the Night too, as the other did.

This Trade held a good while, and we found, that our Cuſtomers came more from other Iſlands, than from the Iſland where the Governour reſided, the Reaſon of which, as we underſtood afterwards, was, becauſe as the Governour had not openly granted a Freedom of Commerce, but privately wink'd at it, ſo they were not willing to carry it on openly before his Face, or *as we ſay*, under his Noſe, whereas in other Iſlands, they could convey their Goods on Shore with very little Hazard, agreeing with the Cuſtom-houſe Officer for a ſmall Matter.

Theſe Boats came and went thus ſeveral Times, till in ſhort we had diſpos'd almoſt of the whole Cargo; and now our Men began to be convinc'd, that we had lay'd out our Uoyage very right, for

never

never was Cargo better ſold; and as we reſolv'd to purſue our Voyage for new *Spain*, we had taken in a Cargo very proper to ſell there, and ſo perhaps to double the Advantage we had already made.

In the mean Time, all our Hands were at Work to ſtore our ſelves anew, with ſuch Proviſions, as could be had here for ſo long a Run, as we knew we were to have next; namely, over the vaſt *Pacifick* Ocean or *South Sea*, a Voyage where we might expect to ſee no Land for four Months, except we touch'd at the *Ladrones*, as it might happen; and our greateſt Anxiety was for Want of Water, wihch our whole Ship could ſcarce be able to ſtow ſufficient for our Uſe, and if they could, our Want of Casks was ſtill as bad as the Want of Water, for we really knew not what to put Water in when we had it.

The *Spaniards* had help'd us to ſome Casks but not many, thoſe that they could ſpare were but ſmall, and at laſt we were oblig'd to make uſe of about two hundred large earthen Jars, which were of ſingular Uſe to us. We got a large Quantity of good Rice here, which we bought of a *Chineſe* Merchant, who came in here with a large *China* Veſſel to trade, and who bought of us alſo ſeveral of our *European* Goods.

Juſt as we were ready to ſail, a Boat came from the Town of *Manilla*, and brought a new Merchant, who wanted more *Engliſh* Goods, but we had but few left; he brought with him thirty Cheſts of Callicoes, Muſlins, wrought Silks, ſome of them admirably fine indeed, with fifteen Bales of Romals, and twelve Tun of Nutmegs. We ſold them what Goods we had left, and gave them Money for the reſt, but had them at a

Price

Price ſo cheap, as was ſufficient to let us know, that it was always well worth while, for Ships to trade from *Europe* to the *Eaſt Indias*; from whence they are ſure to make five or ſix of one. Had more of theſe Merchants come on Board, we were reſolv'd to have lay'd out all the Gold and Silver we had on Board, which, I aſſure you, was a very conſiderable Quantity.

The laſt Merchant, who came on Board us, was a *Spaniard*, but I found, that he ſpoke very good *French*, and ſome *Engliſh*, that he had been in *England* ſome Years ago,and underſtood *Engliſh* Woolen Manufactures very well; he told me,they had theſe Goods all from *Acapulco*, but that they were then exceſſive dear, he had conſiderable Dealings with the *Chineſes*, and ſome with the Coaſt of *Coromandel*, and *Bengale*, and kept a Veſſel or two of his own to go to *Bengal*, which generally went twice in a Year.

I found, he had great Buſineſs with new *Spain*, and that he generally had one of the *Acapulco* Ships chiefly conſign'd to him; ſo that he was full of all ſuch Goods, as thoſe Ships generally carryed away from the *Manilla*'s, and had we traded with him ſooner, we had had more Callicoes and Muſlins, than we now had: However we were exceedingly well ſtor'd with Goods of all Sorts, ſuitable for a Market in *Peru*, whither I reſolv'd to go.

We continued chaffering after this Manner about nine Weeks, during which Time, we carreen'd our Ships,clean'd their Bottoms,rummag'd our Gold, and repack'd ſome of our Proviſions; endeavouring as much as poſſible, to keep all our Men as fully employ'd as we could, to preſerve

them

them in Health, and yet not to over work them; considering the Heat of the Climate.

Some Time before we were ready to sail, I call'd all the Warrant Officers together, and told them, that as we were come to a Country, where Abundance of small Things were to be bought, and going to a Country, where we might possibly have Room to sell them again to Advantage, I would advance to every Officer an hundred Dollars, upon Account of their Pay, that they might lay it out to their Advantage here, and dispose it again on the Coast of *New Spain*, this was very acceptable to them, and they acknowledg'd it; and here, besides this, by the Consent of all our Superior Officers, I gave a Largess or Bounty of five Dollars a Man, to all our Fore-Mast Men; most of which, I believe, they lay'd out in Arrack and Sugar, to chear them up in the rest of the Voyage, which they all knew would be long enough.

We went away from *Marcilla* in the Island of *Luzon* or *Luconia* the fifteenth of the Month of *August*, and in the Year 1714. and sailing a while to the *Southward*, pass'd the Straits between that Island, and *Mindanoa*, another of the *Phillipines*, where we met with little extraordinary, except extraordinary Lightning and Thunders, such as we never heard or saw before, tho' it seems, 'tis very familiar in that Climate; till about sixteen Days sailing, we saw the Isle of *Guam*, one of the *Ladrones*, or Isle of *Thieves*, for so much the Word imports; here we came to an Anchor *Sept*. 3. under the Lee of a steep Shore, on the *North* Side of the Isle of *Guam*; but, as we wanted no Trade here, we did not at first enquire after the chief Port, or *Spanish* Governour, or any thing of that Kind; but we chang'd our Situation the next Day, and

went thro' the Paſſage, to the *Eaſt* Side of the Iſland, and came to an Anchor off of the Town.

The People came off, and brought us Hogs, and Fowls, and ſeveral Sorts of Roots, and Greens, Things, which we were very glad of, and which we bought the more of, becauſe we always found, that ſuch Things were good to keep the Men from the Scurvy, and even to cure them of it, if they had it; we took in freſh Water here alſo, tho' it was with ſome Difficulty, the Water lying half a Mile from the Shore.

When I parted from *Manilla*, and was geting thro' the Strait between the Iſland *Lucon*, and that of *Mindanoa*, I had ſome Thoughts of ſteering away *North*, to try, what Land we might meet with to the *North Eaſt* of the *Phillipines*; and with Intent to have endeavour'd to make up into the Latitude of fifty or ſixty Degrees, and have come about again to the *South*, between the Iſland of *California*, and the main Land of *America*; in which Courſe, I did not queſtion, meeting with extraordinary new Diſcoveries, and perhaps ſuch as the Age might not expect to hear of, relating to the *Northern* World, and the Poſſibility of a Paſſage out of thoſe Seas, either *Eaſt* or *Weſt*, both which, I doubt not, would be found, if they were ſearch'd after this Way; and which, for ought I know, remain undiſcovered for want only of an Attempt being made by thoſe Seas, where it would be eaſy to find, whether the *Tartarian* Seas are navigable or not? And whether *Nova Zembla* be an Iſland, or joyn'd to the Main? Whether the Inlets of *Hudſon*'s *Bay* have any opening into the *Weſt* Sea, and whether the vaſt Lakes, from whence the great River of *Canada* is ſaid to flow, have any Communication this Way, or not.

But

But tho' these were valuable Discoveries, yet when I began to cast up the Account in a more serious Manner, they appear'd to have no Relation to, or Coherence with our intended Voyage, or with the Design of our Employers, which we were to consider in the first Place; for tho' it is true, that we were encourag'd to make all such Kinds of useful Discoveries, as might tend to the Advantage of Trade, and the Improvement of Geographical Knowledge and Experience; yet it was all to be so directed, as to be subservient to the Profits and Advantages of a trading and cruising Voyage.

It is true, that these *Northern* Discoveries might be inimitably fine, and most glorious Things to the *British* Nation, and infinitely for the future Advantage of Commerce in general: yet, as I have said, it was evident, that they tended directly to destroy the Voyage, either as to trading, or to cruising, and might perhaps end in our own Destruction also; for Example; first of all, if adventuring into those *Northern* Seas, we should, by our Industry, make out the Discovery, and find a Passage, either *East* or *West*; we must follow the Discovery so, as to venture quite thro', or else we could not be sure, that it was really a Discovery; for these Passages would not be like doubling Cape *de Bon Esperance*, on the Point of *Africa*; or going round Cape *Horn*, the *Southermost* Point of *America*, either of which were compass'd in a few Days, and then immediately gave an opening into the *Indian* or *Southern* Oceans, where good Weather and certain Refreshment were to be had.

Whereas, for the Discovery in the *North*, after having pass'd the *Northermost* Land of *Grand Tartary*, in the Latitude of seventy four, even to

eighty Degrees, and perhaps to the very *North* Pole: there must be a Run *West*, beyond the most *Northerly* Point of *Nova Zembla*, and on again *W. S. W.* about the *North* Kyn and *North* Cape above six hundred Leagues, before we could come to have any Relief of the Climate after that, one hundred and sixty Leagues more, and even to *Shetland* and the *North* of *Scotland*, before we could meet with any Relief of Provisions, which, after the Length we must have run, from the Latitude of three Degrees and an half, where we now were at the *Phillipine*, Islands, to seventy four, Degrees *North* being near five thousand Miles, would be impossible to be done; unless we were sure to victual, and furnish our selves again, with Provisions and Water by the Way, and that in several Places.

As to the other Passage *East*, towards the Continent of *America*, we had this uncertainty also; namely, that it was not yet discover'd, whether the Land of *California* was an Island, or a Continent, and if it should prove the latter, so as that we should be oblig'd to come back to the *West*, and not be able to find an Opening, between *California* and the Land of *North America*, so as to come away to the Coast of *Mexico*, to *Acapulco*, and so into the *South Sea*, and at the same Time should not find a Passage thro' *Hudson's Bay*, *&c.* into the *North Sea*, and so to *Europe*: we should not only spoil the Voyage that Way also, but should infallibly perish by the Severity of the Season, and want of Provisions.

All these Things argued against any Attempt that Way; whereas on the other Hand, for *Southern* Discoveries we had this particular Encouragement; that what ever Disappointment we might meet with, in the Search after unknown Countries

tries, yet we were ſure of an open Sea behind us; and that when ever we thought fit, to run *South* beyond the *Tropick*, we ſhould find innumerable Iſlands, where we might get Water, and ſome Sort of Proviſions, or come back into a favourable Climate, and have the Benefit of the Trade Winds, to carry us either backward or forward, as the Seaſon ſhould happen to guide us.

Laſt of all, we had this Aſſurance, that, the Dangers of the Seas excepted, we were ſure of an Outlet, before us, if we went forward, or behind us, if we were forc'd back, and having a rich Cargo, if we were to do nothing but go home, we ſhould be able to give our Employers ſuch an Account of our ſelves, as that they would be very far from being Loſers by the Voyage; but that if we reach'd ſafe to the Coaſt of *New Spain*, and met with an open Commerce there, as we expected, we ſhould perhaps make the moſt proſperous Voyage, that was ever made round the Globe before.

Theſe Conſiderations put an End to all my Thoughts of going *Northward*; ſome of our ſecret Council, *for by the way, we conſulted our Foremaſt Men no more, but had a* ſecret Council *among our ſelves, the Reſolutions of which we ſolemnly engag'd not to diſcloſe:* Some of theſe, I ſay, were for ſteering the uſual Courſe, from the *Phillipines* to *New Spain*, *viz.* keeping in the Latitudes of eleven or thirteen Degrees, *North* of the Line, and ſo making directly for *California*; in which Latitude they propos'd, that we might perhaps, by cruiſing there about, meet with the *Manilla* Ships, going from *New Spain* to *Manilla*, which we might take as a Prize, and then ſtand directly for the Coaſt of *Peru*.

But I oppos'd this; principally, becaufe it would effectually overthrow all my meditated Difcoveries to the *Southward*; and fecondly, becaufe I had obferv'd, that on the *North* of the Line, there are no Iflands to be met with, in all the long Run, of near two thoufand Leagues, from *Guam* one of the *Ladrones*, to the Land of *California*; and that we did not find, we were able to fubfift during fo long a Run, efpecially for Want of Water; whereas on the *South* of the Line, as well within the *Tropick* as without, we were fure to meet with Iflands innumerable, and that even all the Way; fo that we were fure of frequent Relief of frefh Water, of Plants, Fowl, and Fifh, if not of Bread and Flefh, almoft all the Way.

This was a main Confideration to our Men, and fo we foon refolv'd to take the *Southern* Courfe; yet, as I faid, we ftood away for the *Ladrones* firft; thefe are a Clufter of Iflands, which lie in about eleven to thirteen Degrees *North* Latitude, *North Eaft* from the *Moluccoes*, or Spice Iflands, and E. and by N. from that Part of the *Phillipines* where we were, and at the Diftance of about four hundred Leagues, and all the Ships, which go or come between the *Phillipines* and *New Spain*, touch at them, for the Convenience of Provifions, Water, *&c.* thofe, that go to *Spain*, put in there, in Order to recruit and furnifh *for*, and thofe that come from *Spain*, to relieve themfelves *after* fo long a Run as that of fix thoufand Miles, for fo much it is at leaft from *Guam* to *Acapulco*; on thefe Accounts, and with thefe Reafonings, we came to the Ifles of the *Ladrones*.

During our Run between the *Phillipine* and *Ladrone* Iflands, we liv'd wholly upon our frefh Provifions, of which we laid in a great Stock at *Ma-*

nilla,

nilla, ſuch as Hogs, Fowls, Calves, and ſix or ſeven Cows, all alive, ſo that our *Engliſh* Beef and Pork, which lay well ſtor'd, was not touch'd for a long Time.

At the *Ladrones* we recruited, and particularly took on Board, as well alive as pickl'd up, near two hundred Hogs, with a vaſt Store of Roots, and ſuch Things as are their uſual Food in that Country; we took in alſo above three thouſand cocoa Nuts and Cabbages; Yams, Potatoes and other Roots for our own Uſe, and in particular we got a large Quantity of Maiz, or *Indian* Wheat for Bread, and ſome Rice.

We ſtor'd our ſelves likewiſe with Oranges and Lemons, and buying a great Quantity of very good Limes, we made three or four Hogſheads of Limejuice; which was a great Relief to our Men in the hot Seaſon, to mix with their Water; as for making Punch, we had ſome Arrack and ſome Sugar, but neither of them in any Quantity, ſo as to have much Punch made afore the Maſt.

We were eighteen Days on our Paſſage from the Streight of *Mindanoa* to *Guam*, and ſtay'd ſix Days at *Guam*, furniſhing our ſelves with Proviſions, appearing all this while with *French* Colours, and Captain *Merlotte* as Commander: However, we made no great Ceremony here with the *Spaniſh* Governor, as I have ſaid already; only that Captain *Merlotte*, after we had been here two Days, ſent a Letter to him by a *French* Officer, who ſhowing his Commiſſion from the King of *France*; the Governor preſently gave us Product, as we call it, and Leave to buy what Proviſions we wanted: In Compliment for this Civility, we ſent the Governor a ſmall Preſent of fine Scarlet Camblet, and two Pieces of Bays;

and he made a very handſome Return, in ſuch Refreſhments as he thought we moſt wanted.

There was another Reaſon for our keeping in this Latitude till we came to the *Ladrones*; namely, that all the *Southern* Side of that Part of the Way between the *Phillipines* and the *Ladrones*, is ſo full of Iſlands, that unleſs we had had very good Pilots, it would have been very hazardous; and add to this, that beyond theſe Iſlands *South*, is no Paſſage; the Land, which they call *Nova Guinea*, lying away *Eaſt* and E. S. E.; farther than has yet been diſcover'd; ſo that it is not yet known, whether that Country be an Iſland or the Continent.

Having for all theſe Reaſons gone to the *Ladrones*, and being ſufficiently ſatisfied in our Reaſons, for going away from thence to the *Southward*, and having ſtor'd our ſelves as above, with whatever thoſe Iſlands produc'd, we left the *Ladrones*, about the tenth Day of *September* in the Evening, and ſtood away E. S. E. with the Wind N. N. W. a freſh Gale; after this, I think, it was about five Days, when having ſtretch'd by our Account about an hundred and fifty Leagues, we ſteer'd away more to the *Southward*, our Courſe S. E. by S.

And now, if ever, I expected to do ſomething by Way of Diſcovery; I knew very well there were few, if any, had ever ſteer'd that Courſe; or that if they had, they had given very little Account of their Travels. The only Perſon who leaves any Thing worth Notice; being *Cornelius Vanſchouton* and *Francis La Mare*, who, tho' they ſail'd very much *South*, yet ſay little to the Purpoſe, as I ſhall ſhew preſently.

The ſixteenth Day after we parted from the *Ladrones*, being, by Obſervation, in the Latitude

of

of ſeventeen Degrees *South* of the Line, one of our Men cried a Sail, a Sail, which put us into ſome fit of Wonder, knowing, nothing of a Ship of any Bulk could be met with in thoſe Seas; but our fit of Wonder was ſoon turn'd to a fit of Laughter, when one of our Men from the Fore-top, cried out *Land*, which indeed was the Caſe; and the firſt Sailor was ſufficiently laugh'd at for his Miſtake, tho', give him his due, it look'd at firſt as like a Sail, as ever any Land at a Diſtance could look.

Towards Evening, we made the Land very plain, Diſtance about ſeven Leagues *S.* by *E.* and found that it was not an Iſland, but a vaſt Tract of Land, extended, as we had Reaſon to believe, from the Side of *Gillolo*, and the Spice Iſlands, or that which we call *Nova Guinea*, and never yet fully diſcovered. The Land lying away from the *West N.W.* to the *S. E.* by *South*, ſtill *Southerly*.

I that was for making all poſſible Diſcovery, was willing, beſides the Convenience of Water, and perhaps freſh Proviſions, to put in her, and ſee what kind of a Country it was: So I ordred the Brigantine to ſtand in for the Shore: They ſounded, but found no Ground within half a League of the Shore; ſo they hoyſted out their Boat and went cloſe in with the Shore, where they found good Anchor hold in about thirty ſix Fathom, and a large Creek, or Mouth of a River; here they found eleven to thirteen Fathom ſoft ouzy Sand, and the Water half freſh at the Mouth of the Creek.

Upon Notice of this, we ſtood in, and came all to an Anchor in the very Creek; and ſending our Boats up the Creek, found the Water per-

fect fresh and very good upon the Ebb, about a League up the River.

Among all the Islands in this Part of the World, that is to say, from the *Phillipines Eastward*, of which there are an infinite Number, We never came near any, but we found our selves surrounded with Canoes and Variety of Boats, bringing off to us *Cocoa Nutts*, *Plantanes*, Roots and Greens, to traffick for such Things as they could get; and that in such Numbers as we were tired with them, and sometimes allarm'd, and oblig'd to fire at them. But here, tho' we saw great Numbers of People at a Distance from the Shore, yet we saw not one Boat or Bark, nor any Thing else upon the Water.

We stay'd two or three Days taking in fresh Water, but it was impossible to restrain our Men from going on Shore, to see what Sort of a Country it was; and I was very willing they should do so: Accordingly, two of our Boats, with about thirty Men in both of them, went on Shore on the *East* Side of the Creek or Harbour, where our Ship lay.

They found the Country look'd wild and savage enough, but tho' they could find no Houses or speak with the Inhabitants, they saw their Footsteps and their Seats where they had sat down under some Trees; and after wandring about a little, they saw People, both Men and Women at a Distance; but they run away from our Men, at first Sight, like frighted Deer; nor could they make any Signal to them to be understood; for when our Men hallood, and call'd after them, they run again as if they had been bewitch'd.

Our Men gather'd a great Variety of green

Stuff, tho' they knew not of what Kind, and brought it all on Board, and we eat a great deal of it; ſome we boyl'd and made Broth of; and ſome of our Men, who had the Scurvy, found it did them a great deal of Good; for the Herbs eat all ſpicey, and had a moſt pleaſant agreeable Taſte, but none of us could tell what to call them, tho' we had ſeveral Men on Board who had been among the Spice Iſlands before in *Dutch* Ships.

We were very uneaſy that we could get nothing here but a little Graſs and Pot-herbs, as our Men call'd it, and the Men mov'd me to let them have two Boats, and go up the River as high as the Tide would carry them: This I conſented to, being as willing to make the Diſcovery as they: So I ordered the Captain of the *Madagaſcar* Ship, who had, as I have ſaid, been formerly my ſecond Mate; I ſay, I order'd him to go along with them.

But in the Morning, a little before the Flood was made, I was call'd out of my Cabbin to ſee an Army, as they told me, coming to attack us: I turn'd out haſtily enough, you may be ſure, and ſuch an Army no Ship were ever attack'd with; for we ſpy'd three or four hundred black Creatures, come playing and tumbling down the Stream, towards us, like ſo many Porpoiſes in the Water: I was not ſatisfied at firſt that they were humane Creatures; but would have perſuaded our Men, that they were Sea-monſters; and that they were certainly Fiſhes of ſome ſtrange Kind.

But they quickly undeceiv'd us, for they came ſwimming about our Ships, ſtaring and wondring, and calling to one another, but ſaid not one

one Word to us; at leaſt, if they did, we could not underſtand it.

Some of them came very near our Ship, and we made Signs to them to come on Board but they would not veuture: We toſs'd one of them a Rope, and he took hold of it boldly; but as ſoon as we offer'd to pull, he let go, and laugh'd at us; another of them did the like, and when he let go, turn'd up his black Buttocks, as in Sport at us; the Language of which, in our Country, we all knew, but whether they meant it ſo or not, that we cannot tell.

However, this dumb converſing with them, we did not like, neither was it to any Purpoſe to us; and I was reſolv'd, if poſſible, to know ſomething more of them than we could get thus: So I ordered out our Pinnace with ſix Oars, and as many other Men, well arm'd, to row among them; and, if poſſible, to take ſome of them and bring them on Board. They went off, but the ſix Oar Pinnace, tho' a very nimble Boat, could not row ſo faſt as they could ſwim; for if pulling with all their might, they came near one of them, immediately, like Dog and Duck, they would dive and come up again thirty or forty Yards off; ſo that our Men did not know which Way to row after them: However, at laſt, getting among the thickeſt of them, they got hold of two, and, with ſome Difficulty, drag'd them in; but were ſurpriz'd to find they were both Women: However, they brought them on Board naked as they were. When they came on Board, I ordred they ſhould have two Pieces of Linnen wrapt round their Waſtes to cover them, which they ſeem'd extraordina-

ry

ry glad of: We gave them alſo ſeveral Strings of Beads, and our Men tyed them about their Necks, and about their Arms like Bracelets, and they were wonderfully pleas'd with that. Others of our Men gave them each of them a Pair of Sciſſars, with Needles, and ſome Thread and threading the Needles, ſhow'd them how to ſow with them: We gave them Food, and each of them a Dram of Arak, and made Signs to know of them where they liv'd; they pointed up to the River, but we could by no Means underſtand them. When we had dreſs'd them up thus with Necklaces, and Bracelets, and Linnen, we brought them up upon the Deck, and made them call to their Country Folk, and let them ſee how well they were uſed, and ask them to come on Board, but they would not venture.

However, as I thought, the Diſcovery we were to make, would be ſomething the eaſier on the Account of the Uſage of theſe two young Women; for they were not, as we gueſs, above twenty or two and twenty Years of Age; we reſolved, that the Boat ſhould go on, as we intended up the River; and that, as theſe two Women pointed that Way, they ſhould carry them along with them.

Accordingly we ſent two Shallops or large Boats, which carried together ſixty Men all well arm'd. We gave them Store of Beads and Knives, and Sciſſars, and ſuch Baubles with them, with Hatchets and Nails, and Hooks, Looking-glaſſes, and the like; and we built up the Sides of the Boat and Stern, and cover'd them with Boards to keep off Arrows and Darts, if they ſhould find Occaſion; ſo that they look'd like *London* Barges: In this Poſture, as ſoon as the Tide of

Flood

Flood was made up, our Men went away, carrying a Drum and a Trumpet in each Boat; and each Boat had alſo two Pattereroes fix'd on the Gunnel near the Bow.

Thus furniſh'd, they went off about eleven a Clock in the Forenoon, and to my very great Uneaſineſs, I heard no more of them in four Days; the whole Ship's Company were indeed ſurpriz'd at their Stay, and the Captain of the Sloop would fain have had me let him have ſail'd up the River with the Sloop as far as the Channel would ſerve; which indeed we found was deep enough. Indeed, as I was unwilling to run any more Riſques; I could not perſwade my ſelf, but, that the Force I had already ſent, was ſufficient to fight five thouſand naked Creatures, ſuch as the Natives ſeem'd to be; and therefore I was very unwilling to ſend: However, I conſented, at laſt, to have our long Boat and two ſmaller Boats mann'd with fifty four Men more, very well arm'd and cover'd from Arrows and Darts, as the other had been, go up the River, upon their ſolemn Promiſe, and with expreſs Order, to return the next Day at fartheſt; ordering them to fire Guns as they went up the River to give Notice to their Fellows, if they could be heard that they were coming; and that in the mean Time, if I fir'd three Guns, they ſhould immediately return.

They went away with the Tyde of Flood, a little before Noon, and went up the River about five Leagues; the Tide running but ſlowly up, and a ſtrong Freſh of Land-water that check'd the Tide coming down; ſo that when the Tide was ſpent, they came to an Anchor; they found the River contrary to their Expectation,

tation, continued both deep enough, and was wider in Breadth than where the Ships were at Anchor; and that it had another Mouth or Outlet into the Sea ſome Leagues farther *Eaſt*; ſo that the Land to the *Eaſt* of us, where our Men went on Shore, was but an Iſland, and had not many Inhabitants, if any at all; the People they had ſeen there, having, poſſibly, ſwam over the other Arm or Branch of the River to obſerve our Ships the nearer.

As our Men found they could go no farther for want of the Tide, they reſolv'd to come to an Anchor; but juſt as they were ſounding, to ſee what Ground they had, and what Depth, a ſmall Breeze at *N. E.* ſprung up; by which they ſtem'd the Current, and reach'd up about two Leagues farther, when they hove over their Grapling in five Fathom Water, ſoft Ground; ſo that all this Way, and much farther, all our Ships might have gone up the Channel, being as broad as the *Thames* is about *Fox-hall.*

It muſt be obſerv'd, that all along this River, they found the Land, after they came paſt the Place where the other Branch of the River broke off, *Eaſtward*, was full of Inhabitants on both Sides, who frequently come down to the Waters-ſide to gaze and look at our Boats. But always, when our Men call'd to them, as if they thought our Men enquir'd after their Fellows, they pointed up the River; which was as much as to ſay, they were gone farther that Way.

However, our Men being not able to go any farther againſt the Tide, took no Notice of that; but after a little while, ſome of them, in one of the ſmaller Boats, row'd towards the Shore, holding up a white Flag to the People, in Token

of

of Peace: But it was all one, and would have been all one, for ought we know, if they had held up a red Flag, for they run all away, Men, Women and Children; nor could our Men by any Perſuaſions, by Geſtures and Signs of any Kind, prevail on them to ſtay, or hardly ſo much as to look at them.

The Night coming on, our Men knew not well what Courſe to take; they ſaw ſeveral of the *Indians* Dwellings and Habitations, but they were all at a Diſtance from the River, occaſion'd, as our Men ſuppos'd, by the Rivers overflowing the flat Grounds near its Banks, ſo as to render thoſe Lands not habitable.

Our Men had a great Mind to have gone up to one of the Towns they ſaw, but he, that commanded, would not permit it, but told them, that if they could find a good landing Place, that they might all go on Shore, except a few, to keep the Boats, they would venture; upon which the ſmalleſt Boat row'd up about a Mile, and found a ſmall River running into the greater, and here they all reſolv'd to land: but firſt they fir'd two Muskets, to give Notice, if poſſible, to their Comrades, that they were at Hand, however they heard Nothing of them.

What Impreſſion the Noiſe of the two Muskets made among the *Indians*, they could not tell, for they were all run away before.

They were no ſooner on Shore, but conſidering, they had not above two Hours Day; and that the *Indian* Villages were at leaſt two Miles off, they call'd a Council, and reſolv'd not to march ſo far into a Country they knew ſo little of, and be left to come back in the dark; ſo they went on Board again and waited 'till Morning, however

they

they view'd the Country, found it was a fertile Soil, and a great Herbage on the Ground: There were few Trees near the River; but farther up, where the *Indian* Dwellings were, the little Hills ſeem'd to be covered with Woods, but of what Kind they knew not.

In the Morning before break of Day, ſome of our Men fancied they heard a Gun fir'd up the River; upon which, the Officer ordered two Muſquets to be fir'd again, as had been done the Evening before; in about a Quarter of an Hour they were anſwer'd by the like Firing; by which, our Men knew that their Comrades heard them; ſo without purſuing their intended Landing, the Tide being then running upwards, they weigh'd, and ſet to their Oars, having little or no Wind, and that which was, blowing down the Stream.

After they had gone about a League, they heard a confuſed Noiſe at a great Diſtance, which ſurprized them a little at firſt; but as they perceiv'd it drew nearer and nearer, they waited a while, when they perceiv'd firſt here and there ſome People, then more, and then about two or three hundred Men and Women together, running, and every one carrying ſomething.

Whither it was they were going, or what it was they carried, we could not tell till they came nearer; when we found that they were all loaded with Proviſions, Cocoa Nuts, Roots, Cabbages, and a great Variety of Things which we knew little of; and all theſe were carrying down to our Ships, as we underſtood afterwards, in Gratitude for our good Uſage of the two young Women.

When these People saw our Men and their three Boats, they were at a full Stop, and once or twice they were ready to lay down all their Loads and run for it; but ours made Signs of Peace, and held up a white Flag to them.

Some of them, it seems, having, as we found, convers'd with our Men, had a little more Courage than the rest, and came to the Shore side, and look'd at the Boats: One of our Men bethought himself of a Stratagem to make known to them our Desire of Peace with them; and taking a String of Beads and some Toys, he held them up at the End of the Boat Hook Staff, and shew'd them to the *Indians*, pointing to them with his Hand, and then pointing with the other Hand, to what the *Indians* carry'd, and to his Mouth, intimating, that we wanted such Things to eat, and would give him the Beads for them.

One of the *Indians* presently understood him, and throws himself into the Water, holding a Bundle of Plants, such as he had truss'd up together, upon his Head, and swiming with the other Hand, and comes so near the Boat, where our Men held out the Staff, as to reach the End of the Staff, take off the String of Beads and Toys, and hang his Bunch of Trash, for it was no better, upon the Hook, and go back again, but would come no nearer.

When he was gotten on Shore again, all his Comrades came about him, to see what he had got; he hung the String of Beads about his Neck, and run dancing about, with the other Things in his Hand, as if he had been mad.

What our Men got, was a Trifle, of less Worth, than a good Bunch of Carrots in *England*, but yet it was useful, as it brought the People to

converse

converſe with us; for after this, they brought us Roots, and Fruits innumerable, and began to be very well acquainted with us.

By that Time our Men had chaffer'd thus, four or five Times, they firſt heard, and in a little while after, ſaw their two great Boats with their Fellows, coming down the River, at about two Miles diſtance, with their Drums and Trumpets, and making Noiſe enough.

They had been, it ſeems, about three Leagues higher up, where they had been on Shore among the *Indians*, and had ſet at Liberty the two Maidens, for ſuch, they underſtood, they were; who, letting their Friends ſee how fine they were dreſs'd, and how well they were us'd, the *Indians* were ſo exceedingly oblig'd, and ſhew'd themſelves ſo grateful, that they thought nothing too much for them; but brought out all the Sorts of Proviſions, which their Country produc'd, which, it ſeems, amounted to nothing, but Fruits, ſuch as Plantanes, Cocoa Nuts, Oranges and Lemons, and ſuch Things, and Roots, which we could give no Name to; but, that which was moſt for our Uſe, was a very good Sort of *Maiz*, or *Indian* Corn, which made us very good Bread.

They had, it ſeems, ſome Hogs, and ſome Goats, but our Men got only ſix of the latter; which were at hand, and were very good. But, that which was moſt remarkable, was, that whereas, in all the Iſlands within the *Tropicks*, the People are thieviſh, treacherous, fierce, and miſchievous; and are arm'd with Lances, or Darts, or Bows and Arrows: theſe appear'd to be a peaceable, quiet, inoffenſive People; nor did our Men ſee any Weapon among them;

except a long Staff, which moſt of the Men carried in their Hands; being made of a Cane, about eight foot long, and an Inch and half Diameter, much like a Quarter Staff; with which they would leap over ſmall Brooks of Water, with admirable Dexterity.

The People were black, or rather of a tawny dark brown; their Hair long, but curling in very handſome Rings: They went generally quite naked, both Men and Women; except that in two Places, our Men ſaid, they found ſome of the Women cover'd, from the Middle downward. They ſeem'd to have no Converſation with the Sea at all, nor did we ſee ſo much as any one Boat among them; nor did any of the Inhabitants dwell near the Sea; but cultivated their Lands very well, in their Way; having abundance of Greens and Fruits, growing about their Houſes; and upon which, we found, they chiefly liv'd. The Climate ſeem'd to be very hot, and yet the Country very fruitful.

Theſe People, by all we could perceive, had never had any converſe, with the reſt of the World by Sea, what they might have by Land, we know not; but as they lie quite out of the Way of all Commerce, ſo it might be probable, they never had ſeen a Ship, or Boat; whether any *European* Ship, or ſo much as a Periagua of the Iſlands. We have mention'd their neareſt Diſtance to the *Ladrones*, being at leaſt four hundred Leagues; and from the Spice Iſlands, and the Country of new *Guinea*, much more; but as to the *European* Shipping, I never heard of any, that ever went that Way, neither do I believe, any ever did.

I take

I take the more Notice of these People's not having convers'd, as I say, with the World, because of the Innocence of their Behaviour, their peaceable Disposition, and their Way of living upon the Fruits and Produce of the Earth; also their Cultivation, and the Manner of their Habitations; no Signs of Rapine or Violence appearing among them. Our Stay here was so little, that we could make no Enquiry into their Religion, Manner of Government, and other Customs: nor have I Room to crowd many of these Things into this Account. They went indeed naked, some of them stark naked, both Men and Women; but I thought, they differ'd in their Countenances, from all the wild People, that I ever saw; that they had something singularly honest, and sincere in their Faces; nor did we find any Thing of Falshood or Treachery among them.

The Gratitude they exprest, for our kindly using the two young Women I have mention'd, was a Token of generous Principles; and our Men told us, that they would have given them what ever they could have ask'd, if they had had it.

In a Word, it was on their Account, they sent that little Army of People to us, loaden with Provisions, which our Men met, before the two Shallops came down. But all the Provisions they had, consisted chiefly in Fruits of the Earth, Cocoa Nuts, Plantanes, Oranges, Lemons, *&c.* and *Maiz*, or *Indian* Corn. We had not any sufficient Time with them, to enquire after what Traffick they had, or whether any Thing fit for us; that they had several fragrant Plants; and I believe, some Spices, as particularly Cin-

namon; that we found, but what elſe the Country produces, we know not.

We came away from hence, after ſeven Days Stay, having obſerv'd little of the Country, more than that it ſeem'd to be very pleaſant, but very hot; the Woods were all flouriſhing and green; and the Soil rich, but no great Matter, that could be the Subject of Trade: But an excellent Place, to be a Bait Land, or Port of Refreſhment in any Voyage, that might afterwards be undertaken that Way.

We ſet Sail, *I ſay*, from hence in ſeven Days, and finding the Coaſt lie fairly on our Starboard ſide, kept the Land on Board all the Way Diſtance about three Leagues; and it held us thus, about an hundred and twenty Leagues due *Eaſt*; when, on a ſudden, we loſt Sight of the Land; whether it broke off, or whether it only drew off farther *South*, we could not tell.

We went on two or three Days more, our Courſe *S. E.* when we made Land again: but found it to be onely two ſmall Iſlands, lying *S.* and by *E.* Diſtance nine Leagues. We ſtood on to them, and two of our Boats went on Shore, but found nothing for our Purpoſe; no Inhabitants, nor any living Creatures, except Sea Fowls, and ſome large Snakes; neither was there any freſh Water. So we call'd that Land Cape *Diſmal*.

The ſame Evening, we ſtood away full *South*, to ſee if we could find out the Continuance of the former Land: But as we found no Land, ſo a great Sea coming from the *South* we concluded, we ſhould find no Land that Way. And varying our Courſe *Eaſterly*, we ran, with a fair freſh Gale at *N. W.* and by *W.* for ſeven Days more; in all which Time, we ſaw nothing but the open

Sea,

Sea, every Way; and, making an Obſervation, found, we had paſs'd the *Southern Tropick*; and that we were in the Latitude of ſix and twenty Degrees and thirteen Minutes; after which, we continued our Courſe ſtill *Southerly* for ſeveral Days more; 'till we found by another Obſervation, that we were in two and thirty Degrees, and twenty Minutes.

This Evening we made Land over our Starboard Bow, Diſtance ſix Leagues, and ſtood away *South* and by *Eaſt*: But the Wind ſlackening, we lay by in the Night; and, in the Morning, found the Land bearing *Eaſt* and by *S.* Diſtance one League and a half; a good Shore and ſounding, we found about five and thirty Fathom, ſtony Ground. Then we hoiſted our Boat out, and ſent it on Shore for Diſcoveries, to ſound the Depth of the Water, and ſee for a good Harbour to put in at.

They went quite in with the Shore, where they found People, Men, and Women, crowding together to look at us. When our Men came cloſe to the Land, they hung out a white Flag; but the wild People underſtood nothing of the meaning of it; but ſtood looking and amaz'd; and we have great Reaſon to believe, that they never had ſeen any Ship or Bark of any Nation, in all their Lives, but their own. We found no Boats, or Sails, or any Thing they had, to make uſe of on the Water: But ſome Days after, we ſaw ſeveral ſmall Canoes, with three or four Men in each.

Our Men not being able to ſpeak any Thing for them to underſtand, or to underſtand any Thing they ſaid, the firſt Thing they did, was, to make Signs to them, for ſomething to eat.

 Upon

Upon which, three of them ſeem'd to go away, and coming again in a few Minutes, brought with them ſeveral Bundles or Bunches of Roots; ſome Plantanes, and ſome green Lemons, or Limes, and laid down all upon the Shore. Our Men took Courage then to go on Shore, and taking up what they brought, they ſet up a Stick, and upon the End of it, hung five Bunches or Strings, of blew and white Beads, and went on Board again.

Never was ſuch Joy among a wild People diſcover'd, as theſe People ſhew'd, when they took the Beads off the Stick: They danc'd, and caper'd, and made a thouſand antick Geſtures; and, inviting our Men on Shore, laid their Hands upon their Breaſts acroſs; and then look'd up, intimating a ſolemn Oath, not to hurt us.

Our Men made Signs, by which they made them underſtand, that they would come again next Morning, and alſo that they ſhould bring us more Eatables; accordingly, we ſent three Boats the next Morning, and our Men carried Knives, Ciſſars, Beads, Looking-Glaſſes, Combs and any Toys they had, not forgetting Glaſs-Beads, and Glaſs-Earings in abundance.

The *Indians* were very ready to meet us, and brought us Fruits and Herbs as before; but Three of them, who ſtood at a Diſtance, held each of them a Creature exactly like a Goat, but without Horns or Beard; and theſe were brought to Traffick with us.

We brought out our Goods, and offer'd every One ſomething, but the Variety was Surprizing to them, who had never ſeen ſuch Things before. But that which was moſt Valuable of all our Things,

was

was a Hatchet, which one of their principal Men took up, and look'd at it, felt of the Edge, and lay'd it down; then took it up again, and wanted to know the uſe of it: Upon which one of our Men took it, and ſtepping to a Tree that ſtood near, cut off a ſmall Bough of it at one Blow: The Man was Surpriz'd, and run to the Tree with it, to ſee if he could do ſo too; and finding the Vertue of it, he lay'd it down, ran with all his Might into the Country, and by and by returning, came with two Men more with him, to ſhew them this wonderful Thing call'd a Hatchet.

But if they were Surpriz'd with the Novelty of a Hatchet, our Men were as much Surpriz'd to ſee hanging round the Ears of both the Men that he brought with him, large flat pieces of Pure Gold, and the Thread which they Hung by, was made of the Hair of the Goats twiſted very prettily together and ſtrong enough.

Our Men offering to Handle them, to ſee if they were Gold, one of the Men takes off his two Bobs, or what we might call them, and offered them to our Men for the Hatchet; our Men ſeemed to make ſome Difficulty of it, as if the Hatchet was of much greater Value than thoſe Trifles; upon which, he being, as we found, Superior, made the other that came with him, pull off his two Ear-Jewels alſo; and ſo our unreaſonable People took them all Four, being of Pure Gold, and Weighing together ſome Grains above two Ounces, in Exchange for an old ruſty Hatchet. Well, however Unreaſonable the Price was, they did not think it ſo; and ſo over-fond was he of the Hatchet, that as ſoon as he had it for his own, he run to the Tree, and in a few Minutes had ſo

lay'd

lay'd about him with the Hatchet, that there was not a Twig left on it that was within his reach.

This Exchange was a particular Hint to me; and I presently Directed my Chief-Mate, and Captain *Merlotte*, to go on Shore the next Day, and acquaint themſelves as much as they could with the Natives, and if poſſible, to find out where they had this Gold, and if any Quantity was to be found.

They beſtowed their Time ſo well, and oblig'd the Natives ſo much, by the Toys and Trifles they gave them, that they preſently told them that the Gold, which they call'd *Aarah*, was pick'd up in the Rivers that came down from a Mountain which they pointed to, a great way off. Our Men prevailed with three of them, to go with them to one of theſe Rivers, and gave them Beads and ſuch Things to encourage them, but by the way, no Hatchet: That was kept up at a high Rate, and as a Rarity, fit only for a King or ſome Great Man that wore *Aarah* on his Ears.

In a Word, they came to the River, where, they ſaid, they found this *Aarah*; and the firſt Thing our Men obſerv'd there, was an *Indian* ſitting on the Ground, and beating ſomething upon a great Stone, with another Stone in his Hand, for his Hammer: they went to ſee what he was doing, and found, he had found a Lump of Gold in the Sand, as big as a Swan Shot, of no regular Shape; but full of Corners, neither round or ſquare; and the Man was beating it flat, as well as he could.

One of our Men, who had a Hatchet in his Hand, made Signs to him, to let him flat it for him; and ſo turning the back Part of the

Hatchet,

Hatchet, which, by the Way, turn'd the Hatchet into a Hammer; he beat the Piece of Gold flat in an Inſtant; and then turning the Edges, beat it that Way, 'till he brought it to be round alſo.

This was ſo ſurprizing to the Man that was beating, that he ſtood looking on, with all the Tokens of Joy and Amazement; and deſiring to ſee the Hatchet, look'd this Way and that Way, upon thoſe of his Country Men, who came with us; as if asking them, if ever they ſaw the like.

When our Man had done, he made Signs to know if he had any more *Aarah*; the Man ſaid nothing, but went down to the Brink of the River; and putting his Hand into a Hole, he brought out three little Lumps of Gold, and a great many ſmaller, ſome of them about as big as a great Pin's Head; all which he had laid up there, in the hollow of a pretty big Stone. Our Man thought it was too much, to take all that for the Hatchet; and therefore pull'd out ſome Beads, and Pieces of Glaſs, and ſuch Toys; and in ſhort, bought all this Cargo of Gold; which, in the whole, weigh'd near five Ounces, for about the Value of two Shillings.

Tho' theſe Bargains were very agreeable to us, yet the Diſcovery of ſuch a Place, and of ſuch a Fund of Treaſure, in a Part of the World, which, it is very probable, was never ſeen before, by any *European* Eyes, nor ſo much as enquir'd after, was the greateſt Satisfaction imaginable to me; knowing the adventurous Temper of the Gentleman, who was our principal Employer. Upon this Account, while my Men buſied themſelves in their daily Search after Gold, and in finding out the Rivers, from whence it came; or rather where it was found:

I employ'd

I employ'd my ſelf to be fully inform'd, where this Place was; whether it was an Iſland, or a Continent; and having found a tolerable good Road for our Ships to ride in; I caus'd my two Shallops well mann'd, to run along the Coaſt, both *Eaſt* and *Weſt*, to find which Way it lay; and whether they could find any End of it; as alſo to ſee, what Rivers, what People, and what Proviſions, they could meet with.

By my Obſervation, I found, as above, that we were in the Latitude of ſeven and twenty Degrees and thirteen Minutes *South* Meridian; diſtance from the *Ladrones* about ſixteen Degrees *Eaſt*. While my Shallops were gone, I went on Shore, and ſome of my Men ſet up Tents on Shore, as well for the Convenience of their Traffick, as for their reſting on Shore all Night; keeping however, a good Guard, and having two of our Ship Dogs with them, who never fail'd giving them Notice, when ever any of the Natives came near them; for what ail'd the Dogs, I know not, but neither of them could bear the Sight of the *Indians*, and we had much to do, to keep them from flying at them.

While we rode here, we had the moſt violent Storm of Wind, with Rain, and with great Claps of Thunder, that we had yet ſuſtain'd, ſince we came out of *England*: It was our Comfort, that the Wind came off Shore, for it blew at *South*, and ſhifting between the S. S. E. and S. W. with ſuch exceſſive Guſts, and ſo furious, and withal, not only by Squals and ſudden Flaws, but a ſettled terrible Tempeſt; that had it been from off Sea, as it was off Shore, we muſt have periſh'd, there had been no Remedy: And even as it was, we rode in great Danger. My Boatſwain call'd,

twice

twice out to me, to cut my Maſts by the Board, proteſting, we ſhould either bring our Anchors home, or founder as we rode; and indeed, the Sea broke over us many Times, in a terrible Manner: As I ſaid before, we had an indifferent good Road, and ſo we had, but not a very good one, for the Land was low; and on the *Eaſt* we lay a little open. However, our Ground Tackle was good, and our Ship very tight, and I told the Boatſwain, I would rather ſlip the Cable, and go off to Sea, than cut the Maſts. However, in about four hours Time more, we found the Wind abate, but it blew very hard for three Days after that.

I was in great Pain for my two Shallops in this Tempeſt, but they had both the good Luck to lie cloſe under the Shore; and one indeed had hauld quite upon the Land, where the Men lay on Shore under their Sail; ſo that they got no Damage; and about three Days after, one of them return'd, and brought me Word, they had been to the *Weſt*, where they had made very little Diſcovery, as to the Situation of the Country; and whether it was an Iſland, or a Continent; but they had convers'd with the Natives very often, and had found ſeveral, that had Pieces of Gold, hanging ſome in their Hair, ſome about their Necks; and they made a ſhift to bring as many with them, as weigh'd, all put together, ſeventeen or eighteen Ounces, for which they had barter'd Toys and Trifles, as we did; but they found no Rivers, where they could diſcover any Gold in the Sands, as we had done, ſo that they believ'd, it all came from that Side where we were.

But our other Shallop had much better Luck; ſhe went away to the *Eaſt*, and by the Time ſhe had gone about ſixteen Leagues, ſhe found the Shore break off a little, and ſoon after, a little more, 'till at length they came, as it were, to the Land's End; when, the Shore running due *South*, they follow'd, according to their Account, near thirteen Leagues more.

In this Time, they went ſeveral Times on Shore, entered three Rivers indifferently large, and one of them very large at the Mouth, but grew narrow again, in three or four Leauges; but a deep Channel, with two and twenty to eight and twenty Fathom Water in it all the Way, as far as they went.

Here they went on Shore, and traffick'd with the Natives; who, they found, rude and unpoliſh'd, but a very mild inoffenſive People; nor did they find them any thing thieviſh, much leſs treacherous; as in ſome ſuch Countries is the Caſe. They had the good Luck, to find out the Place, where, as they ſuppos'd, the King of the Country reſided; which was a Kind of a City, incompaſs'd with a River, almoſt all round; the River making a Kind of double Horſe ſhoe. The Manner of their living is too long to deſcribe; neither could our Men give any Account of their Government, or of the Cuſtoms of the Place; but what they ſought for, was Gold and Proviſions, and of that they got pretty conſiderable.

They found the *Indians* terribly ſurpriz'd at the firſt Sight of them; but after ſome Time, they found means to let them know, they deſir'd a Truce; and to make them underſtand, what they meant by it.

At

At length a Truce being eſtabliſh'd, the King came, and with him near three hundred Men; and ſoon after the Queen, with half as many Women. They were not ſtark naked, neither Men or Women, but wearing a looſe Piece of Cloth about their Middles; what it was made of, we could not imagine: For it was neither Linnen or Woolen, Cotton or Silk; nor was it woven; but twiſted and breeded by Hand, as our Women make Bone Lace with Bobbins. It ſeems it was the Stalk of an Herb, which this was made with; and was ſo ſtrong, that I doubt not, it would have made Cables for our Ships, if we had wanted to make ſuch an Experiment.

When the King firſt came to our Men, they were a little ſhy of his Company, he had ſo many with him, and they began to retire; which the King perceiving, he caus'd all his Men to ſtop, and keep at a Diſtance; and advanc'd himſelf, with about ten or twelve of his Men, and no more.

When he was come quite up, our Men, to ſhew their Breeding, pull'd off their Hats, but that he did not underſtand; for his Men had no Hats on. But the Officer making a Bowe to him, he underſtood that preſently, and bow'd again; at which all his Men fell down flat upon their Faces, as flat to the Ground, as if they had been ſhot to Death with a Volley of our Shot; and they did not fall ſo quick, but they were up again as nimbly, and then down flat on the Ground again; and this they did three Times, their King bowing himſelf to our Men, at the ſame Time.

This Ceremony being over, our Men made Signs to them that they wanted Victuals to Eat, and ſomething to Drink; and pull'd out ſeveral

Things, to let the People ſee they wou'd give ſomething for what they might bring them.

The King underſtood them preſently, and turning to ſome of his Men, he talk'd a while to them, and our Men obſerved, that while he ſpoke, they ſeemed to be terrified, as if he had been Threatening them with Death. However, as ſoon as he had done, three of them went away, and our Men ſuppoſed they went to fetch ſomething that the King wou'd give them; upon which, that they might be before Hand with them, our Men preſented his Majeſty with two Pair of Bracelets of fine Glaſs-Beads of ſeveral Colours, and put them upon his Arms, which he took moſt kindly; and then they gave him a Knife, with a good plain Ivory Handle, and ſome other odd Things. Upon receiving theſe noble Preſents, he ſends away another of his Men, and a little after, two more.

Our Men obſerved, that two of the Men went a great way off toward the Hill, but the other Man that he ſent away firſt, went to his Queen, who with her Retinue of Tawny Ladies, ſtood but a little way off, and ſoon after her Majeſty came with four Women only, attending her.

The Officer who commanded our Men, finding he ſhould have another kind of Compliment to pay the Ladies, retired a little; and being an ingenious handy ſort of a Man, in leſs than half an Hour, he, and another of his Men, made a nice Garland, or rather a Coronet of ſundry Strings of Beads, and with Glaſs Bobs and Pendants, all hanging about it moſt wonderful gay; and when the Queen was come, he went up to the King, and ſhowing it to him, made Signs that he would give it to the Queen.

The

The King took it; but was ſo pleaſed with it, that truly he deſired our Officer to put it upon his own Head, which he did; but when he had got it upon his own Head, he made bold to let our Men ſee, he was King over his Wife, as well as over the reſt of the Country, and that he would wear it himſelf.

With that our Man pulled out a little Pocket Looking-Glaſs, and holding it up, he let his Majeſty ſee his own Face, which we might reaſonably ſuppoſe, he had never ſeen before, eſpecially not with a Crown on his Head too: That till that Looking-Glaſs came, and he ſaw his own Face, he was Grave and Majeſtick, and carried it ſomething like a King; but he was ſo raviſhed with this, that he was quite beſide himſelf, and Jump'd and Caper'd and Danc'd about like a Mad-Man.

All this while, our Men ſaw nothing coming, but that all was given on their Side; whereupon they made Signs again, that they wanted Proviſions: He made Signs again, pointing to a Hill a good way off, as if it wou'd come from thence very quickly; and then look't to ſee if they were coming, as if he was impatient till they came, as well as our People.

During this Time, one of our Men obſerv'd, that the Queen had ſeveral Pieces of Gold, as they thought them to be, hanging about her, as particularly in her Hair, and large flat Plats of Gold upon the hinder part of her Head, ſomething in the place of a Roll as our Women wear; that her Hair was wound about it in Rolls Breeded together very curiouſly; and having inform'd our Officer, he made Signs to the King, for Leave to give the Queen ſomething, which he Conſented to. So he went to her Majeſty,

making a Bowe as before : But this Complisance Surprized her; for upon his Bowing himself, on a sudden falls the Queen and all her four Ladies flat on the Ground, but were up again in a Moment; and our People wondered how they could throw themselves so flat on their Faces, and not hurt themselves; nor was it less to be wonder'd at, how they could so suddenly jump up again, for they did not rise up gradually as we must do, with the Help of our Hands and Knees, if we were extended so flat on our Faces; but they, with a Spring, whether with their Hands or their whole Bodies we know not, jumped up all at Once, and were upon their Feet immediately.

This Compliment over, our Officer stept up to the Queen, and ties about her Neck, a most delicate Necklace of Pearl; *That is to say*, of large handsome white Glass Beads, which might in *England*, cost about Four Pence Halfpenny, and to every one of her Ladies, he gave another of smaller Beads and differing Colours than those which he gave the Queen: Then he presented her Majesty with a long String of Glass-Beads, which being put over her Head, reached down to her Waste before, and joyn'd in a kind of a Tossel, with a little Knot of blew Ribband, which she was also extreamly pleased with; and very fine she was.

The Queen made, it seems, the first Return; for stepping to one of her Women, our Men observed that she took something out of her Hair, and she let her tye her Hair up again; after which she brought it, and gave it to our Officer, making Signs to know if it was acceptable: It was a Piece of Gold that weighed about two Ounces,

and a half; it had been beaten as flat as they knew how to beat it. But the Metal was of much more Beauty to our Men, than the Shape.

Our Officer ſoon let them ſee that he accepted the Preſent, by laying it to his Mouth and to his Breaſt, which he found was the Way when they liked any Thing. In ſhort, our Officer goes to Work again, and in a little while, he makes a little Coronet for the Queen, as he had done before, tho' leſs, and without asking Leave of the King, went up to her, and put it upon her Head ; and then gave her a little Looking-Glaſs, as he had done to the King, to look at her ſelf.

She was ſo Surpriz'd with this, that ſhe knew not what to do with her ſelf ; but to ſhew her Gratitude, ſhe pulled out another Plate of Gold out of her own Hair, and gave it to our Officer ; and not Content with that, ſhe ſent one of her Women to the Crowd of Women that firſt attended her, and whether ſhe Stript them of all the Gold they had, we know not, but ſhe brought ſo many Pieces, that when our Men had them (for ſhe gave all to them) they weigh'd almoſt two pound weight.

But this was not all, when ſhe was thus dreſt, up ſhe ſtept forward, very nimbly and gracefully towards the King, to ſhow him what ſhe had got ; and finding the King dreſs'd up as fine as her ſelf, they had Work enough for near two Hours, to look at one another and admire their new Ornaments.

Our Men reported, that the King was a Tall well Shap'd Man, of a very Majeſtick Deportment, only that when he laugh'd, he ſhewed his Teeth too much, which however, were as white as Ivory : As for the Queen, ſaving that her Skin

was of a Tawny Colour, ſhe was a very pretty Woman; very Tall, a ſweet Countenance, admirable Features, and in a Word, a compleatly handſome Lady.

She was very odly Dreſs'd; ſhe was quite Naked from her Head to below her Breaſts: Her Breaſts were plump and round, not flaggy and hanging down, as it is General with all the *Indian* Women, ſome of whoſe Breaſts hang as low as their Bellies; but Sitting as Beautifully up, as if they had been lac'd up with Stays round her Body; and below her Breaſt, ſhe had a broad piece of a Skin of ſome curious Creature, ſpotted like a Leopard, or rather, as I believe, it was ſome fine ſpotted Deer. This was wrapt round her very Tight, like a *Body-Girt* to a Horſe; and under this, ſhe had a kind of Petticoat as before deſcrib'd, hanging down to her Ankles. As for Shoes or Stockings, they were only ſuch as Nature had furniſhed. Her Hair was black, and as they ſuppos'd, very long; being wreathed up, twiſted in long Locks about the Plate of Gold ſhe wore; and when ſhe pulled off the Plate of Gold as above, it hung down her Back, and upon her Shoulders Gracefully enough; but it ſeems ſhe did not think ſo, for as ſoon as ſhe found it ſo fallen down, ſhe cauſed one of her Women to roll it all up and tye it in a great Knot which hung down in her Neck, and did not look ſo well as when it was looſe.

While the King and the Queen were converſing together about their fine Things as above, our Men went back to their Boat where they left the Purchaſe they had got, and furniſh'd themſelves with other Things fit to Traffick with, as they ſaw Occaſion; and they were not quite

come

come up to the King again, when they perceiv'd that the Men the King had ſent up into the Country were returned; and that they brought with them a great Quantity of ſuch Proviſionsas they had; which chiefly Conſiſted in Roots and *Maiz* or *Indian* Corn, and ſeveral Fruits which we had never ſeen before: Some of them reſembled the large *Europian* Figs, but were not really Figs; with ſome great Jars of Water, having Herbs ſteeped in it, and Roots, that made it look as white as Milk, and drank like Milk ſweetned with Sugar, but more Delicious, and exceeding Cool and Refreſhing. They brought alſo a great Quantity of Oranges, but they were neither Sweet nor Sour, and our Men believed they were not ripe: But when they were Dreſt, after the Manner of the Country, which they ſhew'd our Men how to do, *That is to ſay*, to roaſt them in the Fire, they eat admirably well, and our Men brought a great many away to us, and when we roaſted them, they exceeded all that ever I taſted.

After our Men had received what they brought, and ſhewn that they were acceptable to them, the King made Signs that he wou'd be gone, but wou'd come again to them the next Morning; and pointing to the Queen's Head, where the Plate of Gold had been, that ſhe gave to our Men, intimated, that he would bring ſome of that with him the next Day. But while he was making theſe Signs, one of his other Meſſengers came back and gave the King ſomething into his Hand, wrapt up, which our Men could not ſee: As ſoon as the King had it, as if he had been proud to ſhow our Men that he could make himſelf and his Queen as fine as they could make him, he pull'd

it out, and firſt put it on his Queen (a ſhort Thing like a Robe) which reached from her Neck, *for he put it over her Head*, only down to the ſpotted Skin which ſhe wore before; and ſo it covered her Shoulders and Breaſt. It was made of an infinite Number and Variety of Feathers, odly, and yet very curiouſly put together; and was Spangl'd, as we may call it, all over, with little Drops or Lumps of Gold; ſome no bigger than a Pins-Head, which had Holes made thro' them, and were ſtrung Six or Seven together, and ſo Tyed on to the Feathers: Some as big as a Large Pea, hanging ſingle, ſome as big as a Horſe-Bean, and beaten Flat, and all hanging promiſcuouſly among the Feathers, without any Order or Shape, which notwithſtanding were very Beautiful in the Whole, and made the Thing look Rich and Handſome enough.

As ſoon as he had thus Equipt his Queen, he put the other on upon himſelf, which as it was larger, ſo it had a Particular in its Shape; namely, that it covered his Arms almoſt to his Elbows, and was ſo made, that it came round under the Arm, and being faſtned there with a String, made a kind of Sleeve.

As the King's Robe, or what ever it may be called, was larger, (for it came down to his Waſte) ſo it had a great deal more Gold about it, and larger Pieces than what the Queen wore: When their Majeſties had thus put on their Robes, you may gueſs how Glorious they look'd, but eſpecially the Queen, who being a moſt charming beautiful Creature as before, was much more ſo. When ſhe glitter'd thus all with Gold; our Men look'd very narrowly to obſerve whether there were no Diamonds, and particularly whether

ther any Pearl among their Finery, but they could not perceive any.

In this manner they parted for that Evening; but the People did not leave them ſo, for they throng'd about them; and ſome brought them Jars of the white Liquor, ſome brought them Roots, ſome Fruits, ſome one Thing ſome another; and our Men gave every one of them ſome ſmall Matter or other in Proportion to what they brought. At laſt, there came four particular tall luſty Men, with Bows and Arrows, but before they came cloſe up to our Men, they laid down their Bows and Arrows on the Ground, and came forward with all the Tokens of Friendſhip, they were able to make.

They had two Youths with them, each of which led a tame Fawn of pretty large Growth; and when the Men came up, they gave the two Fawns to our Men; who, in Return, gave them, each of them, a Knife, and ſome Strings of Beads, and ſuch Toys as they had.

Our Men obſerv'd, that all theſe Men had little Bits of Gold, ſome of one Shape, and ſome of another, hanging at their Ears; and when our Men came to be familiar, they ask'd them as well as they could, where they found that Stuff; and they made Signs to the Sand in the River; and then pointed towards that Part of the Country, where our Ships lay; which ſignified to our Men, that the Gold was, moſt of it, where we lay, not there, where the King and Queen reſided. Nay, when our Men pointed again to the River where they were, and went and took up ſome of the Sand, as if they would look for Gold in it, they made Signs of laughing at it, and that there was nothing to be found there, but that it lay all the other Way.

And yet two or three of the Men, who, when the Tide was out, went up the Bank of the River, two or three Mile upon the Sands, peeping and trying the Sands as they went; found three or four little Bits of pure Gold in the Sands, tho' not bigger than Pins Heads; but no doubt, farther up the Country, they might have found more.

Theſe four Men ſeeing how fond our People were of the Gold, made Signs, that they could fetch Gold to them, if they would give them ſuch Things as they lik'd; and ours again told them, they ſhould have any Thing they pleas'd; and, as Earneſt, gave them ſome Peices of Iron, and Bits of Glaſs of ſmall Value, both which they were much delighted with, before Hand.

Early in the Morning, their four Cuſtomers came again, and brought ſeveral Men, who ſeem'd to be Servants, along with them, loaden with Refreſhments; ſuch as the white Water, mention'd above; which they brought in earthen Pots very hard, but made ſo by the Sun, not by any other Fire. They brought alſo three ſmall Deer with them, and a Kind of Coney or Rabbit, but larger; which our Men were very glad of. But that which was above all the reſt, they brought a good Quantity of Gold Duſt, that is to ſay, ſome in ſmall Lumps, ſome in bigger; and one of them had near a Pound weight, wrap'd up in a piece of Coney Skin, which was all ſo very ſmall, that it was like Duſt; which, as our Men underſtood afterwards, was reckon'd little worth, becauſe all the bigger Lumps had been pick'd out of it.

Our Men, you muſt be ſure, were very willing to trade for this Commodity, and therefore

they

they brought out great Variety of Things to truck with them; making Signs to them, to pick out what they lik'd; but ſtill keeping a Reſerve for the King and Queen, who they expected. Above all, they had made a Reſerve for the King, of ſome extraordinary Hatchets which they had not yet ſuffer'd to be ſeen; with a Hammer or two, and ſome drinking Glaſſes, and the like, with ſome particular Toys for the Queen.

But they had Variety enough, (beſides this) for the four Men; who, in ſhort, bought ſo many Trinkets and Trifles, that our Men not only got all the Gold they brought, but the very Pieces of Gold out of their Ears; in Return for which, our Men gave them every one a Pair of Ear Rings, to hang about their Ears, with a fine Drop; ſome of green Glaſs, ſome red, ſome blew; and they were wonderfully pleas'd with the Exchange; and went back, we may venture to ſay, much richer than they came.

As ſoon as theſe had done their Market, and indeed a little before, they perceiv'd at a Diſtance, the King and the Queen, coming with a great Retinue; ſo they made Signs to our Men, that they muſt be gone; and that they would not have the King know, that they had been there.

I muſt confeſs, the Relation of all this made me very much repent, that I had not happen'd to have put in there with the Ships; tho' indeed as the Road lay open to the *Eaſt* and *South* Winds, it might have been worſe another Way; I mean, when the Storm blew. However as it is, I muſt report this Part, from the Account given us by my Men.

When

When the King and Queen came the ſecond Time, they came together, and dreſs'd up, as our Men ſuppos'd, with the utmoſt Magnificence; having the fine feather'd ſpangl'd Things about their Shoulders; and the King had over all his Habit, a fine ſpotted Robe of Deer Skins, neatly joyn'd together; and which, as he manag'd it, cover'd him from Head to Foot; and in ſhort, it was ſo very beautiful, that he really look'd like a King with it.

When he came to our Men, and the Ceremony of their meeting was over, the King, turning round, ſhewed them, that he had brought them Stores of Proviſions; and indeed ſo he had; for he had at leaſt fifty Men attending him, loaden with Roots, and Oranges, and *Maiz*, and ſuch Things; in ſhort he brought them above twenty thouſand Oranges; a great Parcel of that Fruit like a Fig, which I mention'd above, and other Fruits. After which another Party follow'd, and brought twenty live Deer; and as many of their Rabbits dead; the latter are as big as our Hares.

As they came up, the King made Signs to our Men to take them; and our Officer making Signs to thank his Majeſty, he orders one of the Queen's Attendants, to give him one of the feather'd Robes, ſuch a one, as the King himſelf had on; and made mighty fine with Lumps and Toſſels of Gold, as the other. And the tawny Laſs advancing to him, offer'd to put it over his Head; but he took it in his Hand, and put it on himſelf; and look'd as like a Jack Pudding in it, as any one could deſire; for it made no Figure at all upon him, compar'd to what it did upon the *Indians*.

When

When they had receiv'd all this, they could not but make a ſuitable Return; and therefore our Officer caus'd his Reſerve to be brought out; and firſt he gave his Majeſty, a Dozen of very handſome drinking Glaſſes of ſeveral Sizes; with half a Dozen glaſs Beekers, or Cups; to the Queen, for the ſame Uſe. Then he gave the King a little Hanger, and a Belt to wear it by his Side; and ſhew'd him, how to buckle it on, and take it off; and how to draw it out, and put it in again.

This was ſuch a Preſent, and the King was ſo delighted with it, that our Officer ſaid, he believed the King for two Hours together, did nothing but draw it and put it up again, put it on, and pull it off, and the like.

Beſides this, he gave the King three Hatchets; and ſhew'd them the Uſes of them; alſo two large Hammers and a pair of very ſtrong large Sheers, particularly ſhowing him, that with thoſe Hammers, they might beat out the Gold Lumps which they found in the Rivers, and with the Sheers might cut the Edges round, or into what Shape they pleas'd, when they were beaten thin.

To the Queen he gave ſix little Knives, and a dozen ſmall Looking-Glaſſes for her Ladies. Six pair of Ciſars, and a ſmall Box full of large Needles; then he gave her ſome courſe brown Thread, and ſhow'd her how to thred the Needle and ſow any Thing together with the Thread; all which ſhe admired exceedingly, and call'd her Tawny Maids of Honour about her, that they might learn alſo. And whilſt they were ſtanding all together, our Officer (to make the King Laugh) Sewed two of her Women one to another by the Lap of their Waſtecoats, or what elſe it

it might be called; and when they were a little Surpriz'd at it, and began (as he thought) to be a little Uneaſy, he took the Ciſſars, and at one Snap, ſet them at Liberty again: Which paſs'd for ſuch an extraordinary Piece of Dexterity, that the King wou'd needs have two of them Sew'd together again, on purpoſe to ſee it Cut again: And then the King deſired he might have a Needle and Thread himſelf, and a pair of Ciſſars: Then he wou'd Sew ſome things together and Cut them aſunder again ſeveral Times, and Laugh moſt heartily at the Ingenuity of it.

Beſides theſe Things, they gave her Majeſty a pair of Ear-Rings to hang on her Ears, the Glaſs in them looking Green like an Emrald; a Ring of Silver with falſe Stones in it, like a Roſe Diamond Ring, the Middle Stone red like a Ruby; which ſhe went preſently and gave to the King; but our Officer made Signs that he had one that was bigger for the King, and accordingly gave the King one much larger: And now they had done giving Preſents, as they thought, when the King made a Sign to the Queen, which ſhe underſtood, and calling one of her Women, ſhe brought a ſmall parcel, which the Queen gave our Officer into his Hand; wherein was about Eleven pound Weight of Gold-Duſt, but as before, no big Lumps in it.

Our Men having thus finiſh'd their Traffick, and being about to come away, they made Signs to the King, that they wou'd come again and bring him more fine Things; at which the King Smiles, and pointed to the Gold, as if telling them he wou'd have more of that for them when they came again.

Our Men had now their Expectations fully anſwer'd; and, as I ſaid, had ended their Traffick; and taking Leave of the King, and all his Retinue, retired to their Shallop, the King and Queen going away to their City as above; the Wind blowing *Northerly*, they were ſeven Days before they got down to us in the Ship; during which time, they had almoſt Famiſh'd the Deer they had left; Five of which they had kept to bring us alive, and yet they went two or three times on Shore to get Food for them by the way.

We were all glad to ſee them again, and I had a great deal of Reaſon to be very well ſatisfied with the Account of their Traffick, tho' not much with their Diſcovery, for they were not able to give us the leaſt Account whether that Land was a Continent or an Iſland.

But let that be how it will, 'tis certainly a Country yet Unfrequented by any of the Chriſtian part of Mankind, and perhaps may ever be ſo, and yet may be as rich as any other part of the World yet diſcover'd. The Mountains in moſt of the Iſlands, as well as of the main Land in thoſe Parts abounding in Gold or Silver, and no queſtion, as well worth ſearching after, as the Coaſt of *Guinea*; where, tho' the Quantity they find is conſiderable, yet, it is at this Time ſought after by ſo many, and the Negroes taught ſo well how to Value it, that but a little is brought away at a Time, and ſo much given for it, that Computing the Charge of the Voyage, is often times more than it is worth.

Whereas tho' it is true, that what Gold is found here is a great Way off; yet, I am perſuaded, ſuch Quantities are to be had, and the Price given for

for it ſo very Trifling, that it wou'd be well worth ſearching for.

I reckon, that including the Gold our Shallop brought, and what we goton *Shore* where welay, we brought away about twenty four pound Weight of Gold: The Expence of which, we could not Value at above ten or eleven Pound in *England* put it all together; and reckoning for all the Proviſions we got there, which ſupply'd us for twenty Days after we came away.

For while our Shallop was making her Viſit thus to the Royal Family, &c. as is related; our Men were not Idle on Shore, but partly by Trade with the Natives, and by Waſhing the Sands in the ſmall Rivers, we got ſuch a Quantity of Gold, as well Satisfied us for the Stay we made.

We had been about eighteen Days here when our Shallop returned, and we ſtay'd a Week more Trafficking with the People: And I am perſuaded, if we had a mind to have ſettled there and ſtay'd till now, we ſhould have been very Welcome to the People. We ſaw neither Horſe or Cow, Mule, Aſs, Dog or Cat, or any of our *European* ſort of Creatures (except that our Men ſhot ſome Wild-Ducks and Wigeon exactly the ſame which we ſee in *England*, and very Fat and Good, but much eaſier to ſhoot than in *England*, having never been acquainted with the Flaſh and Noiſe of Guns as ours have been: We alſo found a Sort of Patridges in the Country not much unlike our own, and a great many of the Whiſtling Plover the ſame with Ours.

Tho' this Months Stay was Unexpected, yet, we had no Reaſon to think our Time ill ſpent. However, we did not think we ought to lie here too long what ever we got: So we Weigh'd/

and

and ſtood off to Sea, ſteering ſtill *S. E.* keeping the Shore of this Golden Country in Sight, till our Men told us they found the Land fall off to the *South*: Then we Steer'd away more *Southerly* for ſix or eight Days, not loſing Sight of Land all the Time, till by an Obſervation, we found we were in the Latitude of thirty four Degrees and a Half, *South* of the Line; our Meridian diſtance from the *Ladrones*, twenty two Degrees thirty Minutes *Eaſt*; when a freſh Gale of Wind ſpringing up at *South* and by *Eaſt*, oblig'd us to Hale Cloſe for that Evening; at Night it blew ſuch a Storm, that we were oblig'd to yield to the Force of it, and go away afore it to the *N.* or *N.* by *W.* till we came to the point of that Land we paſt before; here the Land tending to the *Weſt* we run in under the Lee of a ſteep Shore, and came to an Anchor in twenty five Fathom Water, being the ſame Country we were in before. Here we rid very ſafe for five Days, the Wind continuing to blow very hard all the Time from the *South Eaſt*.

My Men would fain have had me gone a Shore again, and traffick'd with the People for more Gold; but I, who was ſtill in queſt of farther Diſcoveries, thought, I knew enough of this Place, to tempt my Friend, the Merchant, whoſe favourite Deſign was that of making new Diſcoveries, to another Voyage there; and that was enough for me. So I declin'd going on Shore again, except, that we ſent our Boats for a Recruit of freſh Water; and our Men, while they were filling it, ſhot a Brace of Deer, as they were feeding by the Side of a ſwamp or moiſt Ground; and alſo ſome wild Ducks. Here we ſet up a great wooden Croſs, and wrote on it, the Names of our Ships, and Commanders; and the Time that we came to an Anchor there. But

But we were oblig'd to a farther Diſcovery of this Country than we intended, by the following Accident: We had unmoor'd early in the Morning, and by eight a Clock were under Sail; by ten we had doubled the Point I mentioned above, and ſtood away *S.* keeping the Shore on Board, at the Diſtance of about two Leagues *Weſt*.

The next Day, the Officer, who had been with the Shallop, ſhew'd us the Opening or Mouth where he put in, and where he had made his Traffick with the King of the Country, as you have heard.

We went on ſtill for two Days, and ſtill we found the Land extending it ſelf *South* till the third Day in the Morning, we were a little ſurpriz'd to find our ſelves, as it were, embay'd; being in the Bottom of a deep Gulph, and the Land appearing right a Head, Diſtance about three Leagues; the Coaſt having turn'd away to the *Eaſt* and by *South*, very high Land and Mountainous; and the Tops of ſome of the Hills cover'd with Snow.

Our ſecond Mate and the Boatſwain, upon this Diſcovery, were for coming about, and ſent to me for Orders to make Signals to the other Ship and our Brigantine, who were both a-Head, to do the like; but I, who was willing to acquaint my ſelf, as fully as I could, with the Coaſt of the Country, which I made no Queſtion I ſhould have Occaſion to come to again, ſaid, N O N O, I will ſee a little farther firſt. So I run on, having an eaſy Gale at *N. E.* and good Weather, till I came within about a League and a Half of the Shore, when I found, that in the very Bite or Nook of the

Bay

Bay, there was a great Inlet of Water, which either muſt be a Paſſage or Streight between the Land we had been on Shore upon; which in that Caſe, muſt be a great Iſland, or that it muſt be the Mouth of ſome extraordinary great River.

This was a Diſcovery too great to be omitted, ſo I order'd the Brigantine to ſtand in with an eaſy Sail, and ſee what Account could be had of the Place; Accordingly they ſtood in, and we follow'd about a League, and then lay by, waiting their Signals. I had particularly ordered them to keep two Boats a-Head to ſound the Depth all the Way, and they did ſo; and how it happen'd, we know not, but on a ſudden, we heard the Sloop fire two Guns firſt; and then one Gun; the firſt was a Signal to us to bring too, and come no farther; the next was a Signal of Diſtreſs; we immediately tack'd to ſtand off, but found a ſtrong Current ſetting directly into the Bite, and there not being Wind enough for us to ſtem the Current, we let go our Anchors in twenty two Fathom Water.

Immediately we mann'd out all the Boats we had, great and ſmall, to go and aſſiſt our Brigantine, not knowing what Diſtreſs ſhe might be in; and they found ſhe had driven up, as we were like to have done too far into the Channel of a large River, the Mouth of which, being very broad, had ſeveral Shoals in it; and tho' ſhe had drop'd her Anchor juſt upon Notice which the Boats who were Sounding, gave her; yet ſhe tayl'd a-Ground upon a Sand, and ſtuck faſt; our Men made no Doubt but ſhe would be loſt, and began to think of ſaving the Proviſions and Ammunition out of her. The two Long-Boats

accordingly began to lighten her; and first they took in her Guns, and let out all her Casks of Water; then they began to take in her great Shot and the heavy Goods. But by this Time, they found their Miſtake, for the Current, which I mention'd, was nothing, but a ſtrong Tide of Flood; which, the Indraught of the River being very great, ran up with a very great Force; and, in ſomething leſs than an Hour, the Brigantine fleeted again.

However ſhe ſtuck ſo long upon the Sand, and the Force of the Current or Tide was ſo great, that ſhe receiv'd conſiderable Damage; and had a great deal of Water in her Hold. I immediately order'd our Boats to row to the Land, on both Sides, to ſee, if they could find a good Place to lay her on Shore in; they did ſo, and found a very convenient Harbour, in the Mouth of a ſmall River; which empty'd it ſelf into the great River, about two Leagues within the fore-land of it, on the *North* Side; as the River *Medway* runs into the *Thames*, within the Mouth of it, on the *South* Side; only this was not ſo far up.

Here they ran in the Sloop immediately, and the next Day we came thither alſo; our Boats having ſounded the whole Breadth of the main River, and found a very good Channel, half a League broad; having from ſeventeen to four and twenty Fathom Water all the Way, and very good riding.

Here we found it abſolutely neceſſary, to take every Thing out of the Brigantine, to ſearch her Bottom; for her lying on Shore had ſtrain'd her Seams, and broke one of her Floor Timbers; and having Hands enough, our Men unloaded her in a very little Time, and making a little

Dock

Dock for her, mended all the Damage in about ten Days Time. But ſeeing her in ſo good a Condition, and the Place ſo convenient, I reſolv'd to have her whole Bottom new calk'd and payd; ſo we made her as clean as ſhe was when ſhe firſt came off the Stocks.

This I took for a good Opportunity, to careen and clean our other Ships too; for we had done little to them ſince we came from *Madagaſcar*. We found our *Madagaſcar* Ship much Worm eaten in her ſheathing, which we help'd as well as we could, by new nailing, and by taking out ſome Pieces of her ſheathing, and putting new ones in. But as to our great Ship, ſhe was ſheath'd with Lead, and ſo had receiv'd no Damage at all; only that ſhe was very foul, which we remedied by ſcraping and cleaning, and new graving her quite over.

We were not all employ'd in this Work, and therefore we had Leiſure to make the beſt of our Time, for the main Work of new Diſcoveries. And now I reſolv'd to leave it no more to under Officers, as I had done before, *viz.* when I gave the Command of the Shallop, that traded with the King and Queen, as above, to a Midſhip Man, which I was very ſorry for, tho' the Fellow did his Buſineſs very well too; but I ſay, I reſolv'd not to truſt any one now, but my ſelf.

In the firſt Place, I took the two Shallops, and went croſs the mouth of the great River, to the *South* Shore, to ſee what Kind of a Country was to be found there. For, as to the *North* Side where we were, we found it to be much the ſame, with that Part where we had been before; only that we found no Gold, nor did we perceive, that the People had any.

I found the Mouth of this River or Inlet, to be about four Leagues over, where I crofs'd it, which was about three Leagues and a half within the Inlet it felf. But the Weather being very calm, and the Flood Tide running fharp, we let our Boat drive up in our croffing, about two Leagues more; and we found the Channel grew narrow fo faft, that where we came to Land, it was not full a League over; that about three Leagues farther, we found it a meer River; not above as broad as the *Thames* at *Blackwall*.

We found it a fteep Shore, and obferving a little Creek very convenient for our Purpofe, we ran in our Boats among fome Flags or Rufhes; and lay'd them as foft and as fafe, as if they had been in a Dock; we went all on Shore immediately, except two Men in each Boat, left to guard our Provifions.

We had for Arms, every Man a Mufquet, a Piftol, and a Cutlafs; and in each Boat we had fix half Pikes to ufe, as we might have Occafion. We had alfo every Man a Hatchet, hung in a little Frog at his Belt; and in each Boat a broad Ax and a Saw.

We were furnifh'd with Strings of Beads, Bits of Glafs, Glafs Rings, Earings, Pearl Necklaces, and fuch like Jewelry Ware, innumerable; befides Knives, Ciffars, Needles, Pins, Looking-glaffes, Drinking-glaffes, and Toys great Store.

We were no fooner on Shore, but we found People in Abundance; For there were two or three fmall Towns within a little Way of the Shore; and I fuppofe, we might have the more People about us, becaufe, as we underftood afterwards, they had feen us before, tho' we had not feen them.

We

We made Signs to them, by putting our Fingers to our Mouths, and moving our Chops, as if we were eating, that we wanted Provisions; and we hung up a white Flag for a Truce. They presently understood the first Signal, but knew nothing of the last; and as to Provisions, just as had been the Case before, they brought us out Roots, and Fruits, such as they eat themselves; but such as we had never seen before. Some of them, however, were very sweet and good, and when we boy'ld them, they eat much like an *English* Parsnip; and we gave them Strings of Beads, Pieces of Glass, and such Things as we found, they were always very fond of.

We found the People, as I observ'd of the other, very inoffensive and sincere; not quarrelsome, nor treacherous, or mischievous in the least. And we took Care, not so much as to let them know the Use, or Manner of our Fire Arms a great while; neither was there one Piece fir'd, all the Time we were among the other People, where we had so much Gold: If there had, it had been very probable, that they would have fled the Country, in spight of all the good Usage we could have been able to have shewn them.

The People, where we were now, were not so rich in Gold, as these where we were before; But we found them much better stor'd with Provisions; for besides Deer, of which they had great Plenty and Variety, for they had some of a Sort, which I had never seen before, and besides an infinite Number of those Rabbits, which I mention'd before, which were as big as our Hares, and which do not burrough in the Ground, as our Conies do; they had a Kind of

Sheep, large, (like thoſe of *Peru*, where they are us'd to carry Burthens;) and very good. They have no Wool nor Horns, but are rather hairy, like a Goat; nor ſhould I call them Sheep, but that their Fleſh eats like Mutton; and I know not what elſe to call them. The Natives call'd them *Huttaſh*; but what Breed, or from what Part of the World, or whether created for a Peculiar to this Part, I know not.

However, their Fleſh was very agreeable, and they were fat and good; and as the *Indians* were mightily pleas'd with the Price we paid them, and the Goods we paid them in, they brought us more of theſe *Huttaſhes* than we knew what to do with; and as I can calculate the Rate, I ſuppoſe, we might have them for about eight Pence, or ſometimes, not above ſix Pence coſt each; for they would give us one very thankfully, for a String or two of ſmall Beads, and think themſelves mighty well paid.

I found them ſo plentiful, and ſo eaſy to come at, that in ſhort, I ſent fifty of them alive ty'd Neck and Heels, in one of the Shallops back to our Ships; and order'd them to ſend their long Boats over for more; for tho' it was ſo little a Way over, we did not find, they had any of them on that Side the River.

We did the *Indians* another Piece of Service; for if they gave us Meat, we taught them to be Cooks; for we ſhew'd them how to roaſt it upon a Stick or Spit before the Fire; whereas they eat all their Meat before, either ſtew'd in earthen Pots over the Fire, with Herbs, ſuch as we did not underſtand, or thrown on the Coals of green Wood into the Fire; which, by the Way, always made it ſtink of the Smoak moſt intolerably.

We

We had a great deal of Opportunity now, to converſe with the People on both Sides the River; and we found them to be not only different Nations, but of a differing Speech and differing Cuſtoms. Theſe on the *South* Side, where I now was, ſeem'd to be the beſt furniſh'd with Proviſions, and to live in the greateſt Plenty. But thoſe, on the *North* Side, appear'd better cloath'd, and a more civiliz'd Sort of People; and of the two ſeem'd to have, in their Countenances, ſomething the more agreeable.

However, as they were near Neighbours, for the River only parted them, they were not very much unlike neither. That which ſeem'd moſt ſtrange to me, was, that we found they had little Knowledge or Communication one with another. They had indeed ſome Boats in the River, but they were but ſmall, and rather ſerv'd to juſt waft them over, or to fiſh in them, than for any Carriage; for we found none that could carry above four Men, and theſe very odly made; partly as a Canoe, by hollowing a Tree, and partly by Skins of Beaſts, dry'd and ſtuck on ſo, as they made waſt Cloths to the other; yet they would paddle along at a great Rate with them.

For want of underſtanding their Language, I could come at no Knowledge of their Religion or Worſhip; nor did I ſee any Idols among them, or any Worſhipping of the Sun or Moon. But yet, as a Confirmation that all Nations, however Barbarous, have ſome Notion of a G O D, and ſome Awe of a Superior Power: So I obſerv'd here, that being making a Bargain with one of the principal Men, ſuch I perceiv'd him to be by the Reſpect the reſt ſhew'd him; I ſay, being making

a Bargain with him as well as could be done between People that underſtood not one Word of what either of us ſaid, he had made Signs to bring me twelve Sheep the next Morning, for ſome Things that I was to deliver him of mine. I am ſure the Goods were not all of them of Value ſufficient to give me the leaſt Diſtruſt, but when I gave him the Goods without the Sheep, being as I ſaid to truſt him till next Day, he call'd two Men to him, and pointing to the Goods that I had put into his Hands, he tells upon his Fingers Twelve; letting them know (as I ſuppoſe) that he was to give me twelve Sheep the next Day. ſo far it ſeems they were to be Witneſſes of the Agreement: Then he places his two Hands one upon each Breaſt turn'd very accurately with the Fingers up towards his Face, and holding them there, he looks towards Heaven, with his Face turn'd upward and with the moſt Gravity, Seriouſneſs, and Solemnity in his Countenance, that ever I ſaw in any Mans Face in my Life. When he had continued in this Poſture about a quarter of a Minute, he takes the two Men, and puts them juſt in the ſame Poſture; and then points to me, and then to himſelf, by which I underſtood, firſt, that he ſolemnly ſwore to me, that he wou'd bring the Sheep punctually and faithfully to me, and then he brought the two Men to be Bail or Security for the Performance; *that is to ſay*, to oblige themſelves to perform it, if he did not.

Doubtleſs, thoſe People who have any Notion of a GOD, muſt repreſent Him to themſelves as ſomething Superior, and ſomething that ſees and hears and knows what they ſay or do. Whether theſe People meant the Sun or the Moon, or the Stars, or what elſe I do not Determine for them,

them, but 'tis Viſible they underſtood it to be ſomething to ſwear by; ſomething that could bear Witneſs of their Engagement, and that being called to Witneſs of it, could reſent the Breach of Promiſe. As to thoſe, whoſe Gods are Monſters, and hideous Shapes, frightful Images and terrible Figures, the Motive of their Adoration being that of meer Terror, they have certainly groſs Ideas. But theſe People ſeem to act upon a more ſolid Foundation, paying their Reverence in a manner much more Rational, and to ſomething which it was much more reaſonable to Worſhip; this appear'd in the Solemnity of their Countenances, and their Behaviour in making a ſolemn Promiſe.

We found thoſe People clothed, generally ſpeaking, over their whole Bodies, their Heads, Arms, Legs, and Feet excepted; but not ſo agreeably as thoſe we mentioned above; and we found that the Clothing of theſe, were generally the Skins of Beaſts, but very artfully put together; ſo that though they had neither Needle or Thread, yet they had the ſame Plant as I mention'd before, the Stalk of which, wou'd ſo ſtrongly tye like a Thread, that they peel'd it off thicker or finer as they had Occaſion, and made uſe of it abundance of Ways to Tye and Twiſt, and make their Clothes with it, as well for their Occaſion, as if it had been Woven in a Loom.

We found ſeveral of theſe People had little Bits of Gold about them; but when we made Signs to them to know where they got it, and where it might be had: They made Signs again, pointing to the Country, on the *North* Side the River, ſo that we had it ſeems Chopt upon the right *Gold Coaſt*, in our firſt Coming: They pointed indeed likewiſe, to ſome very high Mountains, which we

ſaw

ſaw at a great Diſtance *S. IV.* ſo that it ſeems as if there was Gold found that way alſo ; but it ſeems the People here had not much of it for their ſhare.

The Men here, had Bows and Arrows, and they uſed them ſo Dexterouſly, that a Wild Gooſe flying over our Heads, one of the *Indians*, ſhot it quite through with an Arrow. One of our Men was ſo Provok'd, to ſee them, as it were, to out do him ; that ſome time after, ſeeing a couple of Ducks flying fair for a Mark, he Preſented his Piece, and ſhot them both flying.

I was very Angry, when I heard the Gun, had I been there, he had never got Leave to ſhoot : However, when it was done, I was pleas'd well enough to ſee the Effect it had upon theſe poor innocent Well-Meaning People ; at firſt it Frighted them to the laſt Degree, and I may well ſay, it Frighted them out of their Wits, for they that were near it, ſtarted ſo violently, that they fell down and lay Speechleſs for ſome Time : Thoſe that were farther off, ran away, as if it had been ſome new kind of Lightning and Thunder, and came out of the Earth inſtead of out of the Clouds : But when they ſaw the two Creatures fall down dead out of the Air, and could ſee nothing that flew up to them to kill them, they were perfectly aſtoniſh'd, and laid their two Hands on their Breaſts, and looked up to Heaven, as if they were ſaying their Prayers, in the ſolemneſt Manner imaginable.

However, this Accident gave them terrible Ideas of us, and I was afraid at firſt, they would run all away from us for fear : I therefore uſed them after it, with all the Kindneſs and Tenderneſs imaginable ; gave them every Day one Trifle or other, which tho' of no Value to me, they were exceeding fond of ; and as we ask'd

nothing

nothing of them, but Proviſions, of which they had great Plenty, and gave us enough every Day to ſatisfy us: As for Drink, they had none of the Milky Liquor, which we had on the other part of the Country : But they had a Root, which they ſteep'd in their Water, and made it drink Hot, as if Pepper had been in it, which made it ſo ſtrong, that tho' it wou'd not make our Men Drunk, it was worſe, for it made them Mad.

I was ſo pleas'd with theſe People, that I came over to them every other Day, and ſome of our Men lay on Shore, under a Sail pitch'd for a Tent; and they were ſo ſafe, that at laſt, they kept no Watch, for the poor People neither thought any Harm, or did any; and we never gave them the leaſt Occaſion to apprehend any Thing from us, at leaſt, not till our Man fir'd the Gun, and that only let them know we were able to Hurt them, not giving them the leaſt Suſpition that we intended it; on the Contrary, one of our Men play'd an odd Prank with them, and fully ſatisfy'd them that we would do them no Harm; this Man having ſeen one of their Children, a little laughing ſpeechleſs Creature, of about two Years old; the Mother having gone from it a little way, on ſome particular Occaſion, the Fellow takes it and led it Home to the Tent, and kept it there all Night.

The next Morning, he dreſt it up with Beads and Jewels wondrous fine, a Necklace about its Neck, and Bracelets of Beads about its Wriſt, and ſeveral Strings of Beads wrapt up and tyed in its Hair, having fed it, and laid it to ſleep, and made much of it all Night; in this Figure, he carried it up in his Arms to the *Indian* Huts or Houſes, where he had found it, and where there had been, it ſeems, a great Out-Cry

for

ſor the Child all the Night, the Mother crying and raiſing her Neighbours, and in a moſt ſtrange Concern.

But when ſome of the Women, her Neighbours, ſaw the Child brought back, there was a contrary Extrream of Joy; and the Mother of it, being (I ſuppoſe) fetch'd, ſhe fell a jumping and dancing, to ſee her Child, but alſo making ſo many odd Geſtures, as our Men could not well tell for a while, whether ſhe was pleas'd or no: The Reaſon it ſeems, was, ſhe did not know whether to Hope or Fear, for ſhe did not know whether the Man wou'd give back her Child, or take it away again.

But when the Man, who had the Child in his Arms, had been told by Signs, that this was the Mother, he beckoned to have her come to him, and ſhe came, but trembling for Fear. Then he took the Child, and Kiſſing it two or three times, he gave it her into her Arms. But it is impoſſible, to expreſs, by Words, the Agony the poor Woman was in; ſhe took the Child, and holding it in her Arms, fix'd her Eyes upon it without Motion, or as it were, without Life, for a good While; then ſhe took it, and Embrac'd it in the moſt paſſionate Manner imaginable: When this was over, ſhe fell a Crying ſo Vehemently, till ſhe Sobb'd; and all this while, ſpoke not one Word: When the Crying had given ſufficient Vent to her Paſſion, then ſhe fell a Dancing, and making a ſtrange odd Noiſe, that we cannot Deſcribe, and at laſt, ſhe leaves the Child, and comes back to the Place where our Men were, and to the Man that brought her Child, and, as ſoon as ſhe came up to him, ſhe falls flat on the Ground, as I have Deſcrib'd, above,

above, the Queen and her Women did, and up again immediately; and thus ſhe did three times, which it ſeems, was her Acknowlegment to him for bringing it back.

The next Day, *for her Gratitude did not end here*, ſhe came down to our Tent, and brought with her two Sheep with a great back Burthen of Roots, of the kind, which I ſaid, they ſteep'd in the Water; and ſeveral Fruits of the Country, as much as two Men, who came with her, could carry; and theſe ſhe gave all to the Man that had brought back her Child. Our Men were ſo mov'd, at the affectionate Carriage of this poor Woman to her Child, that they told me it brought Tears out of their Eyes.

They took her Preſent, but the Man that receiv'd it, took the Woman, and dreſt her up as fine almoſt as he had done the Child, and ſhe went Home like a kind of a Queen among them.

We obſerv'd, while we ſtay'd here, that this was a moſt incomparable Soil, that the Earth was a fat loomy Mould, that the Herbage was ſtrong, that the Graſs, in ſome Places, was very rank and good, being as high as our Mid-Thigh; and that the Air was neither very Hot, nor as we believe, very Cold; we made an Experiment of the Fruitfulneſs of the Soil, for we took ſome white Peaſe, and digging the Ground up with a Spade, we ſowed ſome, and before we went away, we ſaw them come out of the Ground again, which was in about nine Days.

We made Signs to the People, that they ſhou'd let them grow, and that if they gathered them, they were good to eat: We alſo Sow'd ſome *Engliſh* Wheat, and let them know, as well as we could, what the Uſe of them both was. But

I make

I make no doubt, but they have been better acquainted with both by this time, by an Occaſion which follow'd.

Our Men were ſo fond of this Place, and ſo pleas'd with the Temper of the People, the Fruitfulneſs of the Soil, and Agreeableneſs of the Climate; that about twenty of them offered me, if I wou'd give them my Word to come again, or ſend to them to relieve and ſupply them with Neceſſaries, they wou'd go on Shore, and begin a Colony, and live all their Days there. Nay, after this, their Number came up to three and thirty; Or, they offer'd, that if I wou'd give them the Sloop, and leave with them a Quantity of Goods, eſpecially of ſuch Toys as they knew wou'd oblige the People to uſe them well, they wou'd ſtay at all Hazards, not doubting, as they told me, but they ſhould come to *England* again at laſt, with the Sloop full of Gold.

I was not very willing to encourage either of theſe Propoſals, becauſe, as I told them, I might perhaps find a Place as fit to ſettle a Colony in, before we came Home, which was not at ſuch an exceſſive Diſtance from *England*, ſo that it was ſcarce poſſible ever to relive them. This ſatisfied them pretty well, and they were Content to give over the Project; and yet, at laſt, which was more Prepoſterous than all the reſt, five of our Men and a Boy, ran away from us aud went on Shore, and what ſort of Life they led, or how they manage, we are ſcarce ever likely to know, for they are too far off us to enquire after them again: They took a ſmall Yaul with them, and it ſeems had furniſh'd themſelves privately with ſome neceſſary Things, eſpecially Tools, a Grind-Stone, a Barrel of Powder, ſome Peaſe, ſome Wheat;

Wheat, and ſome Barly; ſo that it ſeems, they are reſolv'd to plant there; I confeſs I pittied them, and when I had ſearched for them, and could not find them. I cauſed a Letter to be written to them, and fixt it up upon a Poſt, at the Place where our Ship Careen'd; and another on the South Side, to tell them, that in ſuch a certain Place, I had left other Neceſſaries for them, which I did, made up in a large Caſe of Boards or Planks, and cover'd with Boards like a Shed.

Here I left them Hammocks for Lodging; all Sorts of Tools for building them a Houſe, Spades, Shovels, Pick Axes, an Ax, two Saws; with Clothes, Shoes, Stockings, Hats, Shirts; and in a Word, every Thing that I could think of for their Uſe; and a large Box of Toys, Beads, *&c.* to oblige the Trade with the Natives.

One of our Men, who they had made privy to their Deſign, *but made him promiſe not to reveal it, 'till they were gone*; had told them, that he would perſwade me, if he could, to leave them a farther Supply; and bid them come to the Place, after the Ships were gone; and that they ſhould find Directions left for them, on a Piece of a Board, or a Letter from him, ſet up upon a Poſt. Thus they were well furniſh'd with all Things for immediate living.

I make no doubt, but they came to find theſe Things, and ſince they had a Mind to make Tryal of a wild retir'd Life, they might ſhift very well. Nor would they want any Thing, but *Engliſh* Women, to raiſe a new Nation of *Engliſh* People; in a Part of the World, that belongs neither to *Europe*, *Aſia*, *Africa*, or *America*. I alſo left them every Man another Gun, a Cutlaſs, and a Horn for Powder; and I left

left two Barrels of fine Powder, and two Pigs of Lead for Shot, in another Cheſt by it ſelf.

I doubt not, but the Natives will beſtow Wives upon them, but what Sort of a Poſterity they will make, I cannot foreſee; For I don't find by Enquiry, that the Fellows had any great Store of Knowledge or Religion in them, being all *Madagaſcar* Men, *as we call'd them*; that is to ſay, Pyrates and Rogues; So that for ought I know, there may be a Generation of *Engliſh* Heathens in an Age or two more; tho' I left them five Bibles, and ſix or ſeven Prayer Books, and good Books of ſeveral Sorts; that they might not want Inſtruction, if they thought fit to make Uſe of it, for themſelves or their Progeny.

It is true, this is a Country that is moſt remote from us, of any in the yet diſcover'd World, and conſequently, it would be ſuggeſted as unprofitable to our Commerce; but I have ſomething to alledge in its Defence, which will prove it to be infinitely more advantageous to *England*, than any of our *Eaſt India* Trade can be, or than can be pretended for it. The Reaſon is plain in a few Words: Our *Eaſt India* Trade is all carry'd on, or moſt Part of it, by an Exportation of Bullion in Specie; and a Return of foreign Manufactures or Produce; and moſt of theſe Manufactures alſo, either trifling and unneceſſary in themſelves; or ſuch as are injurious to our own Manufactures. The ſolid Goods brought from *India*, which may be ſaid to be neceſſary to us, and worth ſending our Money for, are but few; for Example:

I. The Returns, which I reckon trifling and unneceſſary, are, ſuch as *China* Ware, Coffee,

Coffee, Tea, Japan Works, Pictures, Fans, Skreens, *&c.*

II. The Returns, that are injurious to our Manufactures, or Growth of our own Country; are printed Callicoes, Chints, wrought Silks, Stuffs of Herba and Barks, Block-Tin, Sugar, Cotton, Arrack, Copper, Indico.

III. The necessary or useful Things are Pepper, salt Peter, dying Woods and dying Earths, Drugs, Lacks, such as Shel-lack, Stick-lack, *&c.* Diamonds, and some Pearl, and raw Silk.

For all these we carry nothing or very little but Money; the innumerable Nations of the *Indies*, *China*, *&c.* despising our Manufactures, and filling us with their own.

On the Contrary, the People in the *Southern* unknown Countries, being first of all very numerous, and living in a temperate Climate, which requires clothing, and having no Manufactures, or Materials for Manufacturs of their own, wou'd consequently take off a very great Quantity of *English* Woollen-Manufactures, especially when Civiliz'd by our dwelling among them, and taught the Manner of Clothing themselves for their Ease and Convenience; and in Return for these Manufactures, 'tis Evident, we shou'd have Gold in Specie, and perhaps Spices; the best Merchandize and Return in the World.

I need say no more to Excite adventurous Heads to search out a Country, by which such an Improvement might be made, and which would be such an Encrease of, or Addition to the Wealth and Commerce of our Country.

Nor can it be objected here, that this Nook of the Country may not easily be found by any One but by us, that have been there before, and perhaps not by us again exactly; for not to enter into our Journal of Observations for their Direction, I lay it down as a Foundation; that whoever, Sailing over the *South-Seas*, keeps a stated Distance from the Tropick to the Latitude of fifty six, to sixty Degrees, and steers *Eastward* towards the *Straights* of *Magellan*, shall never fail to discover new Worlds, new Nations, and new inexhaustible Funds of Wealth and Commerce, such as never were yet known to the Merchants of *Europe*.

This is the true Ocean call'd the *South-Sea*; that Part that we corruptly call so, can be so in no Geographical Account, or by any Rule but by the meer Imposition of Custom, it being only originally call'd so, because they that Sailed to it, were oblig'd to go round the *Southtermost* part of *America* to come into it; whereas it ought indeed to be call'd the *West-Sea*, as it lies on the *West* Side of *America*, and Washes the *Western* Shore of that great Continent for near eight thousand Miles in length; *to wit*, from fifty six Degrees *South* of the Line, to seventy Degrees *North*; and how much farther, we know not: On this Account, I think, it ought to be called the *American* Ocean, rather than with such Impropriety the *South-Sea*.

But this part of the World where we were, may rightly be called the *SOUTH SEA*, by Way of Distinction, as it extends from *India*, round the Globe, to *India* again; and lies all *South* of the Line (even for ought we know) to the very *South* Pole, and which, except some Interposition

of

of Land, whether Iſlands or Continent, really ſurrounds the *South* Pole.

We were now in the very Center or Middle of this *South-Sea*; being, as I have ſaid, in the Latitude of thirty four Degrees twenty Minutes; but having had ſuch good Succeſs in our Enquiry, or Search after new Continents, I reſolved to Steer to the *S.* and *S. E.* as far, as till we ſhou'd be interrupted by Land or Ice, determining to ſearch this unknown Part of the Globe, as far as Nature wou'd permit, that I might be able to give ſome Account to my Employers, and ſome Light to other People that might come that Way, whether by Accident or by Deſign.

We had ſpent ſix and twenty Daysin this Place, as well in Repairing our Brigantine and Careening, and Triming our Ship, that we had not been ſo long, but that we did not reſolve to Careen our Ships, till we had ſpent ten Days about the Brigantine, and then we found more Work to do to the Sheathing of the *Madagaſcar* Ship than we expected.

We ſtored our ſelves here with freſh Proviſions and Water, but got nothing that we could call a Store, except the Fleſh of about thirty Deer, which we Dry'd in the Sun, and which eat indifferently well afterward, but not exraordinary.

We ſailed again the ſix and twentieth Day after we came in, having a fair Wind at *N.* and *N. N. W*; and a freſh Gale, which held us five Days without Intermiſſion; in which Time, running away *S.* and *S. S. E.* we reach'd the former Latitude, where we had been; and meeting with nothing remarkable, we ſteer'd a little farther to the *Eaſtward*; but keeping a *Southerly* Courſe ſtill, 'till we came into the Latitude of forty one; and then going due *Eaſt*, with the

Wind at *N.* and by *W.* we reckon'd our Meridian Diſtance from the *Ladrones*, to be fifty Degrees and a half.

In all this Run we ſaw no Land, ſo we hall'd two Points more *Southerly*, and went on for ſix or ſeven Days more; when one of our Men on the round Top, cry'd Land. It was a clear fine Morning, and the Land he ſpy'd, being very high, it was found to be ſixteen Leagues Diſtance; and the Wind ſlacking, we could not get in that Night, ſo we lay by 'till Morning; when being fair with the Land, we hoiſted our Boat to go and ſound the Shore, as uſual. They row'd in cloſe with the Shore, and found a little Cove; where there was good riding, but very deep Water; being no leſs than ſixty Fathom within Cables Length of the Shore.

We went in however, and after we were moor'd, ſent our Boat on Shore to look for Water, and what elſe the Country afforded. Our Men found Water, and a good Sort of Country, but ſaw no Inhabitants; and upon coaſting a little both Ways on the Shore, they found it to be an Iſland, and without People; but found that about three Leagues off to the *Southward*, there ſeem'd to be a *Terra Firma*, or Continent of Land; where, it was more likely, we ſhould make ſome Diſcovery.

The next Day we fill'd Water again, and ſhot ſome Ducks; and the Day after weigh'd, and ſtood over for the Main, as we thought it to be; here uſing the ſame Caution as we always had done; *(viz.)* of ſounding the Coaſt, we found a bold Shore, and very good Anchor hold, in ſix and twenty to thirty Fathom.

When we came on Shore here, we found People, but of a quite different Condition, from thoſe we had met with before; being wild, furious, and untractable; ſurpriz'd at the Sight of us, but not frighted; preparing for Battle, not for Trade; and no ſooner were we on Shore, but they ſaluted us with rheir Bows and Arrows. We made Signals of Truce to them, but they did not underſtand us; and we knew not what to offer them more, but the Muzzles of our Muſquets; for we were reſolv'd to ſee, what Sort of Folks they were, either by fair Means or foul.

The firſt Time therefore, that they ſhot at our Men with their Bows and Arrows, we return'd the Salute with our Muſquet-Ball, and kill'd two of their beſt Archers. We could eaſily perceive, that the Noiſe of our Pieces terrify'd them; and the two Men being kill'd, they knew not how, or with what, perfectly aſtoniſh'd them; ſo that they ran, as it were, clean out of the Country; that is to ſay, clean out of our Reach; for we could never ſet our Eyes upon any of them after it. We coaſted this Place alſo, according to our uſual Cuſtoms; and to our great Surprize, found it was an Iſland too, tho' a large one; and that the main Land lay ſtill more to the *Southward*, about ſix Leagues Diſtance; ſo we reſolv'd to look out farther, and accordingly ſe t Sail the next Day, and anchor'd under the Shore of this laſt Land, which, we were perſuaded, was really the Main.

We went on Shore here peaceably, for we neither ſaw any People, or the Appearance of any; But a charming pleaſant Valley, of about ten or eleven Miles long, and five or ſix Miles broad; and then it was ſurrounded with

Mountains, which reach'd the full Length; running parallel with the Valley, and closing it in to the Sea at both Ends; so that it was a natural Park; having the Sea on the *North* Side, and the Mountains in a Semi-circle round all the rest of it. These Hills were so high, and the Ways so untrod and so steep, that our Men, who were curious enough to have climb'd to the Top of them, could find no Way, that was practicable to get up; and so after two or three Attempts gave it over.

In this Vale we found abundance of Deer, and abundance of the same Kind of Sheep, which I mention'd lately. We kill'd as many of both, as we had Occasion for; and finding nothing here worth our staying any longer for, except that we saw something like wild Rice growing here, we weigh'd after three Days, and stood away still to the *South*.

We had not sail'd above two Days with little Wind, and an easy Sail, but we perceiv'd this also was an Island, tho' it must be a large one; for by our Account, we sail'd near a hundred and fifty Miles along the Shore of it; and we found the *South* Part, a flat pleasant Country enough; and our Men said, they saw People upon it, on the *South* Side; but we went not on Shore there any more.

Steering due *South* from hence in Quest of the main Land, we went on eleven Days more, and saw nothing significant; and upon a fair Observation, I found, we were in the Latitude of seven and forty Degrees and eight Minutes *South*; then I alter'd my Course a little to the *Eastward*, finding no Land, and the Weather very cold, and going on with a fresh Gale at *S. S. W.* for four

Days,

Days, we made Land again; but it was now to the *E. N. E.* ſo that we were goten, as we may ſay, beyond it.

We fell in with this Land in the Evening, ſo that it was not perceiv'd till we was within half a League of it, which very much alarm'd us; the Land being low, and having found our Error, we brought too, nnd ſtood off and on till Morning, when we ſaw the Shore lie, as it were, under our Larboard-bow, within a Mile and aQuarterDiſtance; the Land low, but the Sea deep and ſoft Ground. We came to an Anchor immediately, and ſent our Shallops to ſound the Shore, who found very good Riding in a little Bay, under the Shelter of two Points of Land, one of which made a kind of Hook, under which we lay ſecure from all Winds that could blow, in ſeventeen Fathom good Ground. Here we had a good Obſervation, and found our ſelves in the Latitude of fifty Degrees twenty one Minutes. Our next Work was to find Water, and our Boats going a-Shore, found Plenty of good Water, and ſome Cattle; but told us they could give no Account what they were, or what they were like. In ſearching this Coaſt, we ſoon found this was an Iſland alſo about elevenLeagues in Length from *N. W.* to *S. E.* what Breadth we could not tell. Our Men alſo, ſaw ſome Signs of Inhabitants; the next Day ſix Men appear'd at a Diſtance, but would take Notice of no Signals, and fled as ſoon as our Men advanc'd. Our People went up to the Place where they lay, and found they had had a Fire of ſome dry Wood; that they had lain there, as they ſuppos'd, all Night, tho' without Covering; they found two Pieces of old ragged Skins of Deer,

which look'd as if worn out by ſome that had uſed them for Cloathing; one Piece of a Skin of ſome other Creature which had been roll'd up into a Cap for the Head, and a Couple of Arrows of about four Foot long, very thick, and made of a hard and heavy Wood; ſo they muſt have very large and ſtrong Bows to ſhoot ſuch Arrows, and conſequently muſt be Men of an uncommon Strength.

Our Men wandered about the Country here three or four Days, with leſs Caution, than the Nature of the Thing requir'd; for they were not among a People of an innocent inoffenſive Temper here, as before, but among a wild untractable Nation; that perhaps had never ſeen Creatures in their own Likeneſs before; and had no Thoughts of themſelves, but of being kill'd and deſtroy'd; and conſequently had no Thoughts of them they had ſeen, but as of Enemies, whom they muſt either deſtroy, if they were able, or eſcape from them, if they were not. However, we got no Harm; neither would the Natives ever appear, to accept any Kindneſſes from us.

We had no Buſineſs here, after we found what Sort of People they were, who inhabited this Place. So as ſoon as we had taken in freſh Water, and catch'd ſome Fiſh, of which we found good Store, in the Harbour or Bay where we rode, we prepar'd to be gone. Here we found the firſt Oyſters, that we ſaw any where in the *South Seas*; and as our Men found them but the Day before we were to ſail, they made great Intreaty to me, to let them ſtay one Day to get a Quantity on Board; they being very refreſhing, as well as nouriſhing to our Men.

But

But I was more eaſily prevail'd with to ſtay, when Captain *Merlotte* brought me out of one Oyſter that he happen'd to open, a true Oriental Pearl; ſo large and ſo fine, that I ſold it, ſince my return, for three and fifty Pound.

After taking this Oyſter, I order'd all our Boats out a dredging; and in two Days Time, ſo great a Quantity there was, that our Men had taken above fifty Buſhels, moſt of them very large. But we were ſurpriz'd, you may be ſure, when, at the opening all theſe Oyſters, we found not one Pearl, ſmall nor great, of any Kind whatever; ſo we concluded, that the other was a lucky Hit only; and that perhaps there might not be any more of that Kind in theſe Seas.

While we were muſing on the Oddneſs of this Accident, the Boatſwain of the *Madagaſcar* Ship, whoſe Boat's Crew had brougt in the great Oyſter, in which the Pearl was found, and who had been examining the Matter; came and told me, that it was true, that their Boat had brought in the Oyſter; and that it was before they went out a dredging in the offing; but that their Boat took theſe Oyſters on the *Weſt* Side of the Iſland, where they had been ſhoaring, as they call'd it; that is to ſay, coaſting along the Shore, to ſee if they could find any Thing worth their Labour; but that afterwards the Boats went a dredging in the Mouth of the Bay where we rode; and where finding good Store of Oyſters, they had gone no farther.

Upon this Intelligence we order'd all Hands to dredging again, on the *Weſt* Side of the Iſland. This was in a narrow Channel, between this Iſland, and a little Cluſter of Iſlands; which we found together extended *Weſt*, the Channel,

where

where our Men fiſh'd, might be about a League over, ſomething better; and the Water about five to ſeven Fathom deep.

They came home well tir'd, and ill pleas'd, having taken nothing near ſo many Oyſters, as before. But I was much better pleas'd, when in opening them, we found a hundred and fifty eight Pearls, of the moſt perfect Colour, and of extraordinary Shape and Size; beſides double the Number of a leſs Size, and irregular Shape.

This quicken'd our Diligence, and encourag'd our Men; for I promis'd the Men two Peices of Eight to each Man above his Pay, if I got any conſiderable Quantity of Pearl. Upon this they ſpread themſeves among the Iſlands, and fiſh'd for a whole Week; and I got ſuch a Quantity of Pearl, as made it very well worth our while; and beſides that, I had Reaſon to believe, the Men, at leaſt the Officers, who went with them, conceal'd a conſiderable Quantity among themſelves; which, however, I did not think fit to enquire very ſtrictly after at that Time.

Had we been nearer home, and not at ſo very great an Expence as three Ships, and ſo many Men at Victuals and Wages; or had we been, where we might have left one of our Veſſels to fiſh, and have come to them again; We would not have given it over, while there had been an Oyſter left in the Sea; or at leaſt, that we could come at: But as Things ſtood, I reſolv'd to give it over, and put to Sea.

But when I was juſt giving Orders, Captain *Merlotte* came to me, and told me, that all the Officers in the three Ships had joyn'd together to make an humble Petition to me; which was,

that

that I would give them one Day to fiſh for themſelves; that the Men had promiſed, that if I would conſent, they would work for them *Gratis*; and they promis'd, if they gain'd any Thing conſiderable, they would account for as much out of their Wages, as ſhould defray the Ships Expence, Victuals, and Wages, for the Day.

This was ſo ſmall a Requeſt, that I readily conſented to it; and told them, I would give them three Days, provided, they were willing to give the Men a Largeſs, as I had done, in Proportion to their Gain. This they agreed to, and to Work they went; but whether it was that the Fellows work'd with a better Will, or that the Officers gave them more Liquor, or that they found a new Bank of Oyſters, which had not been found out before; But ſo it was, that the Officers got as many Pearls, and ſome of extraordinary Size and Beauty, as they afterwards ſold when they came to *Peru*, for 3217 Pieces of Eight.

When they had done this, I told them it was but meet, that as they had made ſo good a Purchaſe for themſelves by the Labour of the Men, the Men ſhou'd have the Conſideration which I had propoſed to them. But now I wou'd make another Condition with them, That we would ſtay three Days more, and what ever was Catch'd in theſe three Days, ſhou'd be Shar'd among the Men at the firſt Port we came at, where they could be Sold; that the Men who had now been out ſo long, might have ſomething to buy Clothes and Liquors, without anticipating their Wages: But then I made a Condition with the Men too, *viz.* that what ever was taken, they ſhou'd Depoſite it in my Hands, and with the joynt Truſt of three Men of their own Chooſing, one out of each Ship, and

that

that we wou'd ſell the Pearl, and I ſhould divide the Money among them equally, that ſo there might be no Quarelling or Diſcontent, and that none of them ſhou'd play any Part of it away: Theſe Engagements they all came willingly into, and away they went a Dredging, Relieving one another punctually; ſo that in the whole three Days, every Man Work'd an equal Share of Hours with the reſt.

But the poor Men had not ſo good Luck for themſelves, as they had for their Officers. However, they got a conſiderable Quantity, and ſome very fine ones; among the reſt, they had Two, in the exact Shape of a Pear, and very exactly Match'd; and theſe they wou'd needs make me a Preſent of, becauſe I had been ſo kind to them, to make the Propoſal for them : I wou'd have paid for them two hundred Pieces of Eight, but One and All, they wou'd not be paid; and wou'd certainly have been very much Affronted, if I had not accepted of them; and yet the Succeſs of the Men was not ſo ſmall, but join'd with the two Pieces of Eight a Man, which I allowed them on the Ships Account, and the like Allowance the Officers made them, and the Produce of their own Purchaſe they Divided afterwards, about fifteen Pieces of Eight a Man, which was a great Encouragement to them.

Thus we ſpent in the whole, near three Weeks here, and called theſe the *Pearl-Iſlands*, tho' we had given no Names to any Places before; we were the more Surpriz'd with this Unexpected Booty, becauſe, we all thought it very Unuſual, to find Pearl of ſo excellent a Kind in ſuch a Latitude as that of forty nine, to fifty; but it ſeems there are Riches yet unknown in thoſe Parts of the

World,

World, where they have never been yet expected; and I have been told, by those who pretend to give a Reason for it, that if there was any Land directly under the Poles, either *South* or *North*, there wou'd be found Gold of a Fineness more than Double to any that was ever yet found in the World: And this is the Reason, they say, why the Magnetick Influence, directs to the Poles, that being the Center of the most pure Metals; and why the Needle, toucht with the Load-Stone, or Magnet, always points to the *North* or *South* Pole. But I do not recommend this as a Certainty, because, 'tis Evident, no Demonstration could ever be arriv'd to, nor could any Creature reach to that particular Spot of Land under the Pole, if such there should be, those Lands being Surrounded with Mountains of Snow, and frozen Seas which never Thaw, and are uterly Unpassible, either for Ships or Men.

But to return to our Voyage, having thus spent, as I have said, three Weeks on this unexpected Expedition; we set Sail, and as I was almost satisfied with the Discoveries we had made, I was for bending my Course *Due-East*, and so directly for the *South* part of *America*; but the Winds now blowing fresh from the *N. W.* and good Weather, I took the Occasion, as a Favourable Summons, to keep still on *Southing* as well as *East*, till we came into the Latitude of fifty six; when our Men who had been all along, a Warm-Weather-Voyage, began to be Pinch't very much with the Cold, and particularly Complain'd, that they had not Cloaths sufficient for it.

But they were brought to be Content by Force; for the Wind continuing at *N.* and *N. N. W.* and blowing very hard, we were oblig'd to keep on our

Course

Courſe farther *South* indeed, than I ever intended; and one of our Men ſwore we ſhou'd be driven to the *South*-Pole; indeed, we rather ran afore it, than kept our Courſe; and in this Run, we ſuffered the extreameſt Cold, tho' a *Northerly* Wind in thoſe Latitudes is the warm Wind, as a *Southerly* is here; but it was attended with Rain and Snow, and both Freezing Violently; at length, one of our Men cry'd out Land, and our Men began to rejoice; but I was quite of a differing Opinion, and my Fears were but too juſt; for as ſoon as ever he cry'd Land, and that I ask'd him in what Quarter, and he anſwered *Due South* which was almoſt right a Head, I bid wear the Ship, and put her about immediately, not doubting, but inſtead of Land, I ſhou'd find it a Mountain of Ice, and ſo it was; and it was Happy for us that we had a ſtout Ship under us, for it blew a Fret of Wind. However, the Ship came very well about, tho' when ſhe fill'd again, we found the Ice not half a League Diſtance under our Stern.

As I hapened to be the Headmoſt Ship, I fir'd two Guns to give Notice to our other Veſſels, for that was our Signal to come about, but that which was very Uneaſy to me, the Weather was Hazy, and they were both out of Sight; which was the firſt time that we loſt Sight of one another in thoſe Seas: However, being both to Windward, and within Hearing of my Guns, they took the Warning, and came about with more Leaſure, and leſs Hazard than I had done.

I ſtood away now to the *Eaſtward*, firing Guns continually, that they might know which Way to follow; and they anſwered me duly, to let me know that they heard me.

It was our great good Hap alſo, that it was Day when we eſcaped this Danger; in the Afternoon the Wind abated, and the Weather clear'd up: We then call'd a Council, and reſolv'd to go no farther *S.* being then in the Latitude of ſixty ſeven *South*, which I ſuppoſe, is the fartheſt *Southern* Latitude that any *European* Ship ever ſaw in thoſe Seas.

That Night it froze extreamly hard, and the Wind Veering to the *S. W.* it was the ſevereſt Cold that ever I felt in my Life; a Barrel or Cask of Water, which ſtood on the Deck, Froze intirely in one Night, into one Lump, and our Cooper, Knocking off the Hoops from the Cask, took it to Pieces, and the Barrel of Ice ſtood by it ſelf, in the true Shape of the Veſſel it had been in. This Wind was however Favourable to our Deliverance, for we ſtood away now *N. E.* and *N. E.* by *N.* making freſh Way with a fair Wind.

We made no more Land, till we came into the Latitude of ſixty two, when we ſaw ſome Iſlands at a great Diſtance, on both Sides of us; we believed them to be Iſlands, becauſe we ſaw many of them, with large Openings between. But we were all ſo willing to get into a warmer Climate, that we did not incline to put in any where, till having run thus fifteen Days, and the Wind ſtill holding *Southerly* with ſmall Alteration and clear Weather, We could eaſily perceive the Climate alter'd, and the Weather grew Milder; and here taking an Obſervation, I found my ſelf in the Latitude of Fifty and a Half, and that our Meridian-Diſtance from the *Ladrones Weſt*, was eighty ſeven Degrees, being almoſt one Sem-idiamiter of the Globe, ſo that I could not be

be far from the Coaſt of *America*, which was my next Deſign, and indeed, the chief Deſign of the whole Voyage.

On this Expectation, I chang'd my Courſe a little, and went away *N.* by *E.* till by an Obſervation, I found my ſelf in forty ſeven Degrees ſeven Minutes, and then ſtanding away *Eaſt*, for about eleven Days more, we made the Tops of the *Andes* the great Mountains of *Chili* in *South-America* to our great Joy and Satisfaction, tho' at a very great Diſtance.

We found our Diſtance from the Shore, not leſs than twenty Leagues, the Mountains being ſo very High, and our next Buſineſs was to Conſider, what part of the *Andes* it muſt be, and to what Port we ſhou'd Direct our ſelves firſt. Upon the Whole, we found we were too much to the *South* ſtill, and reſolved to make directly for the River or Port of *Valdivia* or *Baldivia*, call it which you pleaſe, in the Latitude of forty Degrees; ſo we ſtood away to the *North*: The next Day this *Pacifick quiet Sea*, as they call'd it, ſhew'd us a very frowning rough Countenance, and prov'd the very Extreme of a contrary Diſpoſition. For it blew a Storm of Wind at *E.* by *S.* and drove us off the Coaſt again, but it abated again for a Day or two; and then for ſix Days together, it blew exceſſive hard, almoſt all at *Eaſt*; ſo that I found no poſſibility of getting into the Shore: And beſides, I found that the Winds came off that Mountainous Country in Squals; and that the nearer we came the Hills, the Guſts were the more Violent: So I reſolved to run for the Iſland of *Juan Ferandes* to refreſh our ſelves there until the Weather was ſettled; and beſides we wanted freſh Water very much.

The

The little that the Wind ſtood *Southerly* help'd me in this Run, and we came in five Days more fair with the Iſland, to our great Joy, and brought all our Ships to an Anchor as near the watering Place as is uſual, where we rode eaſy, tho' the Wind continued to blow very hard; and being, I ſay, now about the Middle of our Voyage, I ſhall break off my Account here, as of the firſt Part of my Work, and begin again at our Departure from hence.

It is true, we had got over much the greater Run, as to Length of Way; but the moſt important Part of our Voyage was yet to come; and we had no inconſiderable Length to run neither, for as we purpoſed to ſail *North*, the Height of *Panama*, in the Latitude of nine Degrees *N.* and back again by Cape *Horn*, in the Latitude of, perhaps, ſixty Degrees *South*, and that we were now in forty Degrees *South*; thoſe three added to the Run, from Cape *Horn* home to *England*, made a prodigious Length, as you will ſee by this following Account; in which, alſo the Meridian Diſtances are not at all reckoned; tho' thoſe alſo are very great.

	Deg:
From *Juan Fernando* to the Line.	30
From the Line to *Panama*	9
Carried over	39

Brought over	39
From *Panama* to Cape *Horn*, including the Diſtance we take in going round	60
From Cape *Horn* to the Line again in the N. Seas	60
From the Line to *England*	51
	210 Degrees.

N. B. Only you muſt deduct from this Account, the Diſtance from *Lima* to *Panama*, becauſe we did not go up to *Panama*, as we intended to do.

By this Account we had almoſt thirty Degrees to run more than a Diameter of the Globe, beſides our Diſtance *Weſt*, where we then were, from the Meridian of *England*, whither we were to go; which, if exactly calculated, is above ſeventy Degrees, take it from the Iſland of *Juan Fernandes*.

But to return a little to our Stay in this Place, for that belongs to this Part of my Account, and of which I muſt make a few ſhort Obſervations.

It was ſcarce poſſible to reſtrain *Engliſh* Men, after ſo long beating the Sea, from going on Shore, when they came to ſuch a Place of Refreſhment as this; nor indeed was it reaſonable to reſtrain them, conſidering how we all might be ſuppoſed to ſtand in need of Refreſhment; and conſidering that here was no Length of Ground for the Men to wander in, no Liquors to come at to diſtract them with their Exceſs; and, which was ſtill more, no Women to diſorder or debauch them: We all knew their chief Exerciſe would be Hunting Goats for their Subſiſtance; and we knew alſo, that, however they wanted the Benefit of freſh Proviſion, they muſt work hard to catch it, before they could taſte the Sweet of it. Upon theſe Conſiderations, I ſay, our Ships being well moor'd, and riding ſafe, we reſtrain'd none of them, except a due Number to take Care of each Ship; and thoſe were taken out by Lot, and then had their Turn alſo to go on Shore ſome Days afterwards, and, in the mean Time, had both freſh Water and freſh Meat ſent them immediately, and that in ſufficient Quantity, to their Satisfaction. As ſoon as we were on Shore, and had look'd about us, we began firſt with getting ſome freſh Water, for we greatly wanted it, then carrying a ſmall Cask of Arack on Shore, I made a Quantityof it be put into a whole Butt of Water before I let our Men drink a Drop; ſo correcting a little the Chilneſs of the Water, becauſe I knew they would drink an immoderate Quantity, and endanger their Healths: And the Effect anſwer'd my Care; for thoſe who drank at the Spring, where they took in the Water, before I got this Butt fill'd, and before the

Arack was put into it, fell into Swoonings and faint Sweats, having gorg'd themſelves too much with the cool Water; and two or three, I thought, would have dy'd; but our Surgeons took ſuch Care of them, that they recover'd.

While this was doing, others cut down Branches of Trees, and built us two large Booths, and five or ſix ſmaller; and we made two Tents with ſome old Sails: And thus we encamp'd, as if we had been to take up our Dwelling, and intended to People the Iſland.

At the ſame Time, others of our Men began to look out for Goats, for you may believe, we all long'd for a little freſh Meat. They were a little too haſty at their Work at firſt; for firing among the firſt Goats they came at, when there was but a few Men together, they frighted the Creatures, and they ran all away into Holes, and among the Rocks and Places where we could not find them: So that for that Day they made little of it. However, ſending for more Fire-men, they made a Shift to bring in ſeventeen Goats the ſame Day; whereof we ſent five on Board the Ships, and feaſted with the reſt on Shore. But the next Day the Men went to work in another Manner, and with better Conduct; for as we had Hands enough, and Fire-arms enough, they ſpread themſelves ſo far, that they, as it were, ſurrounded the Creatures; and ſo driving them out of their Faſtneſſes and Retreats, they had no Occaſion to ſhoot, for the Goats could not get from them, and they took them every where with their Hands, except ſome of the old He-goats, which were ſo ſurly, that they would ſtand at Bay, and riſe at them, and would

not

not be taken; and these, as being old also, and as they thought, good for nothing, they let go.

In short, so many of our Men went on Shore, and these divided themselves into so many little Parties, and ply'd their Work so hard, and had such good Luck, that I told them, it look'd as if they had made a general Massacre of the Goats, rather than a Hunting.

Our Men also might be said, not to refresh themselves, but to feast themselves here with fresh Provisions; for, tho' we stay'd but thirteen Days, yet we kill'd three hundred and seventy Goats; and our Men who were on Board, were very merrily employ'd, I assure you; for they might be said to do very little but *roast* and *stew*, and *broil* and *fry* from Morning to Night; it was indeed an exceeding Supply to them, for they had been extremely fatigu'd with the last Part of their Voyage, and had had no fresh Provisions for six Weeks before.

This made them hunt the Goats with the more Eagerness; and indeed, they surrounded them so dexterously, and follow'd them so nimbly, that, notwithstanding the Difficulties of the Rocks, yet the Goats could hardly ever escape them. Here our Men found also very good Fish, and some few Tortoises, or Turtles, as the Sea-men call them; but they valued them not, when they had such Plenty of Venison: Also they found some very good Herbs in the Island, which they boil'd with the Goats Flesh, and which made their Broth very savoury and comfortable, and withal very Healing and good against the Scurvy, which in those Climates *English* Men are very subject to.

We were now come to the Month of *April* 1715, having ſpent almoſt eight Months in this trafficking wandering Voyage, from *Manilla* hither. And whoever ſhall follow the ſame, or a like Track, if ever ſuch a Thing ſhall happen, will do well to make a Year of it, and may find it very well worth while.

I doubt not, but there are many undiſcover'd Parts of Land to the *Weſt*, and to the *South* alſo; of the firſt Shore, of which I mention'd, that we ſtay'd trafficking for little Bits of Gold. And tho' it is true, that ſuch a Traffick, as I have given an Account of, is very advantageous in it ſelf, and worth while to look for; eſpecially after having had a good Market for an outward bound *European* Cargo, according to the Pattern of ours at the *Phillipines*; and which, by the Way, they need not miſs; I ſay, as this Trade for Gold would be well worth while, ſo had we gone the beſt Way, and taken a Courſe more to the *South* from *Manilla*, not going away *E.* to the *Ladrones*, we ſhould certainly have fallen in with a Country from the Coaſt of *New Guinea*, where we might have found Plenty of Spices, as well as of Gold.

For why ſhould we not be allow'd to ſuppoſe, that the Country on the ſame Continent, and in the ſame Latitude, ſhould produce the ſame Growth? Eſpecially conſidering them ſituated, as it may be call'd, in the Neighbourhood of one another.

Had we then proceeded this Way, no Queſtion, but we might have fixt on ſome Place for a Settlement, either *Engliſh* or *French*; whence a Correſpondence being eſtabliſh'd with *Europe*, either by Cape *Horn Eaſt*, or the Cape *De Bona*

Eſpe-

Eſperance Weſt, as we had thought fit; they might have found as great a Production of the Nutmegs, and the Cloves, as at *Banda*, and *Ternate*; or have made thoſe Productions have been planted there for the future, where, no doubt, they would grow and thrive as well, as they do now in the *Molucco's*.

But we ſpun out too much Time for the Buſineſs we did; and tho' we might, as above, diſcover new Places, and get very well too; yet we did nothing, in Compariſon of what we might be ſuppos'd to do, had we made the Diſcovery more our Buſineſs.

I cannot doubt alſo, but that when I ſtood away *South*, it was too late; for had I ſtood into the Latitude of ſixty ſeven at firſt, as I did afterwards, I have good Reaſon to believe, that thoſe Iſlands, which we call the *Molucco's*, and which lie ſo thick, and for ſo great an Extent, go on yet farther, and it is ſcarce to be imagin'd, that they break off juſt with *Gilloto*.

This I call a Miſtake in me; namely, that I ſtood away *Eaſt* from the *Phillipines* to the *Ladrones*, before I had gone any Length to the *South*.

But to come to the Courſe ſet down in this Work, namely, *S. E.* and by *E.* from the ſaid *Ladrones*, the Places I have taken Notice of, as theſe, do not, in my Opinion, appear to be inconſiderable, and of no Value; ſo had we ſearch'd farther into them, I doubt not, but there are greater Things to be diſcover'd; and perhaps, a much greater Extent of Land alſo. For as I have but juſt, as it were, deſcrib'd the Shell, having made no Search after the Kernel; it is more than probable, that within

the Country, there might be greater Diſcoveries made, of immenſe Value too. For even as I obſerv'd ſeveral Times, whenever we found any People that had Gold, and ask'd them, as well as by Signs we could make them underſtand, they always pointed to the Rivers, and the Mountains, which lay farther up the Country, and which we never made any Diſcovery of; having little in our View, but the getting what little Share of Gold, the poor People had about them. Whereas had we taken a Poſſeſſion of the Place, and left a Number of Men ſufficient to ſupport themſelves, in making a farther Search; I cannot doubt, but that there muſt be a great deal of that, of which the unactive *Indians* had gotten but a little.

Nor had we any skilful Man among us, to view the Face of the Earth; and ſee what Treaſure of choice Vegetables might be there. We had indeed ſix very good Surgeons; and one of them, who we took in among the *Madagaſcar* Men, was a Man of very great Reading, and Judgment; But he acknowledg'd, he had no Skill in Botanicks, having never made it his Study.

But, to tell the Truth, our *Doctors* themſelves, *ſo we call the Surgeons at Sea*, were ſo taken up in the Traffick for Gold; that they had no Leiſure to think of any Thing elſe. They did indeed pick up ſome Shells, and ſome ſtrange figur'd Skeletons of Fiſhes, and ſmall Beaſts, and other Things, which they eſteem'd as Rarities; But they never went a Simpling, as we call it; or to enquire, what the Earth brought forth that was rare, and not to be found any where elſe.

I think likewiſe, 'tis worth obſerving, how the People we met with, where, 'tis probable, no Ships, much leſs *European* Ships, had ever been ; and where they had never convers'd with Enemies, or with Nations accuſtomed to ſteal and plunder ; I ſay, the People, who liv'd thus, had no Fire, no Rage in their Looks ; no jealous Fears of Strangers doing them Harm ; and conſequently no Deſire to do Harm to others. They had Bows and Arrows indeed, but it was rather to kill the Deer and Fowls, and to provide themſelves Food, than to offend their Enemies ; for they had none.

When therefore removing from thence, we came to other and different Nations, who were ravenous and miſchievous, treacherous and fierce ; we concluded, they had convers'd with other Nations ; either by going to them, or their Veſſels coming there. And to confirm me in this Opinion, I found, theſe fierce falſe *Indians* had *Canoes* and Boats ; ſome of one Kind, and ſome of another ; by which perhaps, they convers'd with the Iſlands, or other Nations near them ; and that they alſo receiv'd Ships and Veſſels from other Nations ; by which they had ſeveral Occaſions to be upon their Guard ; and learn'd the treacherous and cruel Part from others ; which Nature gave them no Ideas of before.

As the Natives of theſe Places were tractable and courteous, ſo they would be made eaſily ſubſervient and aſſiſtant to any *European* Nation that would come to make Settlements among them ; eſpecially, if thoſe *European* Nations uſed them with Humanity and Courteſy ; for I have made it a general Obſervation concerning

cerning the Natural Diſpoſition of all the Savage Nations that ever I met with: That if they are once but really oblig'd, they will be always very faithful.

But it is our People, I mean the *Europeans*, breaking Faith with them, that firſt teaches them Ingratitude; and inures them to treat their new Comers with Breach of Faith, and with Cruelty and Barbarity. If you once win them by Kindneſs, and doing them good, I mean at firſt, before they are taught to be Rogues by Example, they will generally be honeſt, and be kind alſo to the uttermoſt of their Power.

It is to be obſerv'd, that it has been the Opinion of all the Sailors, who have navigated thoſe Parts of the World, that farther *South* there has been great Tracts of undiſcover'd Land; and ſome have told us, they have ſeen them, and have call'd them by ſuch and ſuch Names; as particularly the Iſles of *Solomon*, of which yet, we can read of no Body that ever went on Shore on them, or that could give any Account of them; except ſuch as are Romantick, and not to be depended upon.

But what has been the Reaſon why we have hitherto had nothing but Gueſſes made at thoſe Things, and that all that has been ſaid of ſuch Lands, has been imperfect? The Reaſon, if I may ſpeak my Opinion, has been, becauſe it is ſuch a prodigious Run from the Coaſt of *America* to the Iſlands of the *Ladrones*, that the few People who have perform'd it, never durſt venture to go out of the Way of the Trade Winds, leſt they ſhould not be able to ſubſiſt for want of Water and Proviſions;

ſions; and this is particularly the Caſe in the Voyage from the Coaſt of *America* only.

Whereas, to go the Way which I have mark'd out, had we ſeen a Neceſſity, and that there was no Land to be found to the *South* of the Tropick, for a Supply of Proviſions and freſh Water, it was evident we could have gone back again from one Place to another, and have been conſtantly ſupplied; and this makes it certain alſo, that it cannot be reaſonably undertaken by a Ship going from the *Eaſt*, I mean the Coaſt of *America*, to the *Weſt*: But from the *Weſt*, viz. the Spice Iſlands, to *America Weſt*, it may be adventured with Eaſe, as you ſee.

It is true, That *William Cornelius Van Schouton* and *Francis la Mair*, who firſt found the Paſſage into the *South-Sea* by Cape *Horn*, and not to paſs the Streights of *Magellan*; I ſay, they did keep to the *Southward* of the Tropick, and paſs, in Part, the ſame Way I have here given an Account of, as by their Journals, which I have by me at this Time, is apparent.

And it is as true alſo, that they did meet with many Iſlands and unknown Shores in thoſe Seas, where they got Refreſhment, eſpecially freſh Water: Perhaps ſome of the Places were the ſame I have deſcrib'd in this Voyage; but why they never purſued that Diſcovery, or mark'd thoſe Iſlands and Places they got Refreſhments at, ſo that others, in queſt of Buſineſs, might have touch'd at them, and have receiv'd the like Benefit, that I can give no Account of.

I cannot help being of Opinion, let our Map-makers place them where they will, that thoſe Iſlands, where we ſo ſucceſsfully fiſh'd for Oyſters, or rather for Pearl, are the ſame which the ancient Geographers have call'd *Solomon*'s Iſlands; and tho' they are ſo far *South*, the Riches of them may not be the leſs; nor are they more out of the Way. On the contrary, they lie directly in the Track which our Navigators would take, if they thought fit either to go or come between *Europe* and the *Eaſt-Indies*, ſeeing they that come about Cape *Horn*, ſeldom go leſs *South* than the Latitude of ſixty three to ſixty four Degrees; and theſe Iſlands, as I have ſaid, lie in the Latitude of Forty to Forty Eight *South*, and extend themſelves near one hundred and ſixty Leagues in Breadth from *North* to *South*.

Without doubt, thoſe Iſlands would make a very noble Settlement, in Order to victual and relieve the *European* Merchants, in ſo long a Run as they have to make; and when this Trade came to be more frequented, the Calling of thoſe Ships there would enrich the Iſlands, as the *Engliſh* at St. *Hellena* are enriched by the refreſhing which the *Eaſt-India* Ships find, that meet there.

But to return to our preſent Situation, at St. *Juan Fernando*; the Refreſhment which our Men found here, greatly encourag'd and reviv'd them; and the Broths and Stewings which we made of the Goats Fleſh which we kill'd there, than which, nothing could be wholeſomer, reſtored all our ſick Men; ſo that we loſt but two Men in our whole Paſſage from the *Eaſt-Indies*; and had loſt but eight Men

Men in our whole Voyage from *England*, except I ſhould reckon thoſe five Men and a Boy to be loſt, which ran away from us in the Country among the *Indians*, as I have already related.

I ſhould have added, that we careen'd and clean'd our Ships here, and put our ſelves into a Poſture for whatever Adventures might happen; for, as I reſolved upon a Trading Voyage upon the Coaſt of *Chili* and *Peru*, and a Cruiſing Voyage alſo, as it might happen; ſo, I reſolved alſo, to put our Ships into a Condition for both, as Occaſion ſhould preſent.

Our Men were nimble, at this Work eſpecially, having been ſo well refreſhed and heart'ned up, by their extraordinary Supply of freſh Meats, and the Additions of good Broths and Soops, which they fed on every Day in the Iſland, and with which, they were ſupplied without any Manner of Limitation, all the while they were at work.

This, I ſay, being their Caſe, they got the *Madagaſcar* Ship hall'd down, and her Bottom waſh'd and tallow'd, and ſhe was as clean as when ſhe firſt came off of the Stocks, in five Days Time; and ſhe was rigg'd, and all ſet to rights, and fit for Sailing in two more.

The great Ship was not ſo ſoon fitted, nor was I in ſo much Haſte, for I had a Deſign in my Head, which I had not yet communicated to any Body, and that was to ſend the *Madagaſcar* Ship a Cruiſing, as ſoon as ſhe was fitted up: Accordingly, I ſay, the fifth Day ſhe was ready, and I managed it ſo, that the Captain of the *Madagaſcar* Ship, openly, before all the Men, made the Motion, as if it had been his own Project, and deſired

desired I would let him go and try his Fortune, as he call'd it.

I seemed loth at first, but he added to his Importunity, that he and all his Crew were willing, if they made any Purchase, it should be divided among all the Crews, in Shares, according as they were shipped; that if it was Provisions the Captain should buy it at half Price, for the Use of the whole, and the Money to be shared.

Well, upon hearing his Proposals, which were esteemed very just, and the Men all agreeing, I seemed to consent, and so he had my Orders and Instructions, and Leave to be out twelve Days on his Cruise, and away he went; his Ship was an excellent Sailor, as has been said, and being now a very clean Ship, I thought he might speak with any Thing, or get away from any Thing, if he pleased; by the Way, I ordered him to put out none but *French* Colours.

He cruised a Week without seeing a Sail, and stood in quite to the *Spanish* Shore in one Place, but that he was wrong in; the eighth Day, giving over all Expectations, he stood off again to Sea, and the next Morning he spy'd a Sail, which was a large *Spanish* Ship, and which seemed to stand down directly upon him, which a little check'd his Forwardness; however, he kept on his Course, when the *Spaniard* seeing him plainer, than, it seems, he had done at first, tack'd, and crouding all the Sail he could carry, stood in for the Shore.

The *Spaniard* was a good Sailor, but our Ship plainly gained upon her, and in the Evening came almost up with her; when he saw the Land, tho' at a great Distance, and he was loth to be seen, chaceing her, from the Shore; however, he followed,

lowed, and Night coming on, the *Spaniard* chang'd his Courſe, thinking to get away, but as the Moon was juſt riſing, our Men, who reſolved to keep her in Sight, if poſſible, perceived her, and ſtretch'd after her with all the Canvas they could lay on.

This Chaſe held till about Midnight, when our Ship coming up with her, took her, after a little Diſpute; they pretended, at firſt, to have nothing on Board but Timber, which they were carrying, as they ſaid, to ſome Port for the building of Ships: But our Men had the Secret to make the *Spaniards* confeſs their Treaſure, if they had any; ſo, that after ſome hard Words with the *Spaniſh* Commander, he confeſſed he had ſome Money on Board, which on our Mens Promiſe of good Uſage, he afterwards very honeſtly delivered, and which might amount to obout ſixteen Thouſand Pieces of Eight.

But he had what we were very glad of beſides, (*viz.*) about two hundred great Jars of very good Wheat Flower, a large Quantity of Oil, and ſome Casks of Sweet-Meats, all which was to us very good Prize.

But now our Difficulty was, what we ſhould do with the Ship, and with the *Spaniards*; and this was ſo real a Difficulty, that I began often to wiſh he had not taken her, leaſt her being let go, ſhe ſhould alarm the Country, or if detained, diſcover us all.

It was not above one Day beyond his Orders, that we had the Pleaſure of ſeeing him come into the Road, with his Prize in tow, and the Flower and Oil was a very good Booty to us; but upon ſecond and better Thoughts, we brought the *Spaniards* to a fair Treaty, and, which was more difficult, brought all our Men to conſent to it.

The

The Caſe is this, knowing what I propoſed to my ſelf to do, namely, to trade all the Way up the *Spaniſh* Coaſt, and to paſs for *French* Ships, I knew the taking this *Spaniſh* Ship would betray us all, unleſs I reſolved to ſink the Ship and murther all the Men, ſo I came to this Reſolution, namely, to talk with the *Spaniſh* Captain, and make Terms with him, which I ſoon made him very glad of.

Firſt I pretended to be very angry with the Captain of the *Madagaſcar* Ship, and to have put him under Confinement, for having made a Prize of his Catholick Majeſty's Subjects, we being Subjects to the King of *France*, who was in perfect Peace with the King of *Spain*.

Then I told him, that I would reſtore him his Ship and all his Money, and as to his Flower and Oil, which the Men had fallen greedily upon, having a Want of it, I would pay him the full Value in Money for it all, and for any other Loſs he had ſuſtained, only that I would oblige him to lie in the Road at the Iſland where we were, till we returned from our Voyage to *Lima*, whether we were going to trade, for which lying, I alſo agreed to pay him Demorage for his Ship, after the Rate of eight hundred Pieces of Eight *per* Month, and if I returned not in four Months, he was to be at his Liberty to go.

The Captain, who thought himſelf a Priſoner and undone, you may beſure, would embrace this Offer; and ſo we ſecured his Ship till our Return, and there we found him very honeſtly at an Anchor, of which in its Place.

The End of the Firſt Part.

A NEW

VOYAGE

ROUND THE

WORLD.

PART II.

WE were now, as I have ſaid, much about the Middle of our Voyage, at leaſt as I had intended it, and having ſtor'd ourſelves with every thing the Place afforded, we got ready to proceed, for we had, as it were, dwelt here near a Fortnight.

By this Time the Weather was good again, and we ſtood away to the *S. E.* for the Port of *Baldivia*, as above, and reach'd to the Mouth of the Harbour in Twelve Days Sail.

I was now to change Faces again, and Captain *Merlote* appear'd as Captain, all Things being tranſacted in his Name, and *French* Captains were put into the *Brigantine*, and into the *Madagaſcar* Ship alſo: The firſt Thing the Captain did, was to ſend a civil Meſſage to the *Spaniſh* Governor, to acquaint him, That being come into thoſe Seas as Friends, under his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty's Commiſſion, and with the King of *Spain*'s Permiſſion, we deſir'd to be treated as Allies, and to be allowed to take Water and Wood, and to buy ſuch Refreſhments as we wanted, for which we would pay ready Money; alſo we carry'd *French* Colours, but took not the leaſt Notice of our Intention to trade with them.

We received a very civil Anſwer from the Governor (*viz.*) That being the King of *France*'s Subjects, and that they were in Alliance with us, we were very welcome to Wood and Water, and any Proviſion the Place would afford; and that our Perſons ſhould be ſafe, and in perfect Liberty to go on Shore, but that he could not allow any of our Men to lie on Shore, it being expreſs in his Orders, That he ſhould not permit any Nation, not actually in Commiſſion from the King of *Spain*, to come on Shore, and ſtay there, no not one Night; and that this was done to prevent Diſorders

We anſwered, That we were content with that Order, ſeeing we did not deſire our Men ſhould go on Shore to ſtay there, we not

beirg

being able to anſwer for any Miſ-behaviour, which was frequent among Seamen.

While we continued here, ſeveral *Spaniards* came on Board and viſited us, and we often went on Shore on the ſame Pretence; but our Supra-Cargo, who underſtood his Buſineſs too well not to make uſe of the Occaſion, preſently let the *Spaniards* ſee, that he had a great Cargo of Goods to diſpoſe of; they as freely took the Hint, and let him know, that they had Money enough to pay for whatever they bought; ſo they fell to work, and they bought *Eaſt-India* and *China* Silks, *Japan* Ware, *China* Ware, Spice, and ſomething of every thing we had. We knew we ſhould not ſell all our Cargo here, nor any extraordinary Quantity; but we knew, on the other Hand, that what we did ſell here, we ſhould ſell for One hundred Pounds *per Cent* extraordinary: I mean, more than we ſhould ſell for at *Lima*, or any other Ports on that Side, and ſo we did; for here we ſold a Bottle of Arrack for Four Pieces of Eight; a Pound of Cloves for Five Pieces of Eight, and a Pound of Nutmegs for Six Pieces of Eight; and the like of other Things.

They would gladly have purchas'd ſome *European* Goods, and eſpecially *Engliſh* Cloth and Bays; but as we had, indeed, very few ſuch Things left, ſo we were not willing they ſhould ſee them, that they might not have any Suſpicion of our being *Engliſh* Men, and *Engliſh* Ships, which would ſoon have put an End to all our Commerce.

While we lay here trafficking with the *Spaniards*, I ſet ſome of my Men to work, to converſe among the Native *Chilians* or *Indians*, as we call them, of the Country, and ſeveral things they learn'd of them according to the Inſtructions which I gave them; for Example; Firſt, I underſtood by them, That the Country People who do not live among the *Spaniards*, have a mortal Averſion to them; that it is riveted in their Minds by Tradition, from Father to Son, ever ſince the Wars which had formerly been among them; and that though they did not now carry on thoſe Wars, yet the Animoſity remained, and the Pride and cruel haughty Temper of the *Spaniards* was ſuch ſtill to thoſe of the Country People, who came under their Government, as makes that Averſion continually increaſe. They let us know, That if any Nation in the World would but come in, and aſſiſt them againſt the *Spaniards*, and ſupport them in their Riſing againſt them, they would ſoon rid their Hands of the whole Nation. This was to the Purpoſe, exactly, as to what I wanted to know.

I then ordered particular Enquiry to be made, Whether the Mountains of *Andes* (which are, indeed, prodigious to look at, and ſo frightful for their Height, that 'tis not to be thought of without ſome Horror) were in any Places paſſable? what Country there was beyond them? and whether any of their People had gone over and knew the Paſſage?

The *Indians* concurr'd with the *Spaniards* in this (for our Men enquir'd of both) That though the *Andes* were to be ſuppoſed, indeed, to be the higheſt Mountains in the World, and that, generally ſpeaking, they were unpaſſable, yet that there had been Paſſages found by the Vales among the Mountains; where, with fetching ſeveral Compaſſes and Windings, partly on the Hills, and partly in the Valleys, Men went, with a great deal of Eaſe and Safety, quite through or over, call it as we will, to the other called the *Eaſt-ſide*, and as often returned again.

Some of the more knowing *Indians* or *Chilians* went farther than this, and when our Men enquir'd after the Manner, Situation and Produce of the Country on the other Side, they told them, That when they paſs'd the Mountains from that Part of the Country, they went chiefly to fetch Cattle, and kill Deer, of which there were great Numbers in that Part of the Land; But that when they went from St. *Jago*, they turned away *North* ſome Leagues, when they came to a Town called St. *Anthonio de los Vejos*, or, The Town of St. *Anthony* and the old Men; That there was a great River at that City, from whence they found Means to go down to the *Rio de la Plata*, and ſo to the *Buenos Ayres*; and that they frequently carried thither great Sums of Money in *Chilian* Gold, and brought back *European* Goods from thence.

I had all I wanted now, and bad my Men ſay no more to them of that, only tell them, That they would come back, and would travel a little that Way to ſee the Country : The People appeared very well pleaſed with that, aſſuring them, That if they would do ſo, they ſhould find ſome, as well *Spaniards* as *Chilians*, who would be Guides to them thro' the Hills; alſo aſſuring them, That they would find the Hills very practicable, and the People, as they went along, very ready to aſſiſt and furniſh them with whatever they found they wanted, eſpecially if they come to know that they were not *Spaniards*, or that they would protect them from the *Spaniards*, which would be the moſt agreeable Thing to them in the World; for it ſeems many of the Nations of the *Chilians*, had been driven to live in the Hills, and ſome even beyond them, to avoid the Cruelty and Tyranny of the *Spaniards*, eſpecially in the Beginning of their planting in that Country.

The next Enquiry I ordered them to make, was, Whether it was poſſible to paſs thoſe Hills with Horſes, or Mules, or any kind of Carriages? and they aſſured them, They might travel with Mules, and even with Horſes alſo, but rather with Mules; but as to Carriages, ſuch as Carts, or Waggons, they allowed, that was not practicable. They aſſured us, That ſome of thoſe Ways thro' the Hills were much frequented; and that there were Towns, or Villages rather, of People, to be found in the Valleys between

the

the ſaid Hills; ſome of which Villages, were very large, and the Soil very rich and fruitful, bearing ſufficient Proviſions for the Inhabitants, who were very numerous. They told us, The People were not much inclin'd to live in Towns as the *Spaniards* do, but that they liv'd ſcatter'd up and down the Country, as they were guided by the Goodneſs of the Land; that they liv'd very ſecure and unguarded, never offering any Injury to one another, nor fearing Injury from any, but the *Spaniards*.

I caus'd theſe Enquiries to be made with the utmoſt Prudence and Caution, ſo that the *Spaniards* had not the leaſt Suſpicion of our Deſign; and thus having finiſhed our Traffick, and taken in Water and Proviſions, we ſailed from *Baldivia*, having ſettled a little Correſpondence there with Two *Spaniards*, who were very faithful to us; and with Two *Chilian Indians*, who we had, in a particular Manner, engaged, and who, to make ſure of, we took along with us; and having ſpent about Thirteen Days here, and taken the Value of about Six thouſand Pieces of Eight in Silver or Gold, but moſt of it in Gold, we ſet Sail.

Our next Port was the Bay of the *Conception*: Here, having Two or Three Men on Board, who were well acquainted with the Coaſt, we run boldly into the Bay, and came to an Anchor in that which they call the Bite, or little Bay, under the Iſland *Quiriquina*; and from thence we ſent our Boat, with *French* Mariners to row, and a *French*

Coxon, with a Letter to the *Spaniſh* Governor, from Captain *Merlote*. Our Pretence was always the ſame as before, That we had his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty's Commiſſion, *&c.* and that we deſired Liberty to Wood and Water, and to buy Proviſions, having been a very long Voyage, and the like.

Under thoſe Pretences, we lay here about Ten Days, and drove a very conſiderable Trade for ſuch Goods as we were ſure they wanted; and having taken about the Value of Eight thouſand Pieces of Eight, we ſet Sail for the Port or River that goes up to St. *Jago*, where we expected a very good Market, being diſtant from the *Conception* about Sixty-five Leagues.

St. *Jago* is the Capital City of *Chily*, and ſtands Twelve Leagues within the Land; there are Two Ports, which are made uſe of to carry on the Traffick of this Place, *viz. R. de Ropocalmo*, and Port *de Valpariſo.* We were bound to the laſt, as being the only Port for Ships of Burthen, and where there is Security from bad Weather.

We found means here, without going up to the City of St. *Jago*, to have Merchants enough to come down to us; for this being a very rich City, and full of Money, we found all our valuable Silks of *China*, our *Atlaſs*'s, *China* Damaſks, Satins, *&c.* were very much valued, and very much wanted, and no Price was too high for us to aſk for them; for, in a Word, the *Spaniſh* Ladies, who, for Pride, do not come behind any in the World, whatever they do for Beauty; were

were ſo eager for thoſe fine Things, that, almoſt, any reaſonable Quantity might have been ſold there; but the Truth is, We had an unreaſonable Quantity, and therefore, as we had other Markets to go to, we did not let them know what a great Stock of Goods we had, but took care they had ſomething of every thing they wanted: We likewiſe found our Spices were an excellent Commodity in thoſe Parts, and ſold for a monſtrous Profit too, as, indeed, every thing elſe did alſo, as above.

We found it very eaſy to ſell here to the Value of One hundred and thirty thouſand Pieces of Eight, in all ſorts of *China* and *Eaſt-India* Goods; for ſtill, though we had ſome of the *Engliſh* Cargo looſe, we let none of it be ſeen. We took moſt of the Money in Gold uncoin'd, which they get out of the Mountains in great Quantities, and of which we ſhall have Occaſion to ſpeak more hereafter.

Our next trading Port was *Coquimbo*, a ſmall Town, but a good Port: Here we went in without Ceremony, and upon the ſame Foot, of being *French*, were well received, traded underhand with the *Spaniſh* Merchants, and got Letters to ſome other Merchants at *Guaſco*, a Port in a little Bay about Fifteen Leagues *North* from *Coquimbo*.

From hence, to the Port of *Copiapo*, is Twenty-five Leagues: Here we found a very good Port, though no trading Town or City; but the Country being well inhabited, we found Means to acquaint ſome of the principal *Spaniards* in the Country, of what we

were,

were, and (with which they were pleaſed well enough) That they might trade with us for ſuch Things, which it was eaſy to ſee, they gave double Price for to the Merchants who came from *Lima*, and other Places: This brought them to us with ſo much Eagerneſs, that though they bought for their own Uſe, not for Sale, yet they came furniſhed with Orders, perhaps, for Two or Three Families together, and being generally rich, would frequently lay out Six hundred, or Eight hundred Pieces of Eight a Man; ſo that we had a moſt excellent Market here, and took above Thirty thouſand Pieces of Eight; that is to ſay, The Value of it, for they ſtill paid all in Gold.

Here we had Opportunity to get a Quantity of good Flower, or Wheat Meal, of very good *European* Wheat; that is to ſay, Of that ſort of Wheat; and withal, had good Biſket baked on Shore, ſo that now we got a large Recruit of Bread, and our Men began to make Puddings, and liv'd very comfortably; likewiſe we got good Sugar at the Ingenioes, or Sugar-Mills, of which there were ſeveral here, and the farther *North* we went, their Number increaſed, for we were now in the Latitude of Twenty-eight Degrees Two Min. *South.*

We had but one Port now, of any Conſequence, that we intended to touch at, 'till we came to the main Place we aim'd at, which was *Lima*, and this was about Two thirds of the Way thither; I mean *Porto Rica*, or *Arica*; this was in the Latitude of Eigh-

teen

teen Degrees, or thereabouts: They were very ſhy of us here, as having been much upon their Guard for ſome Years paſt, for fear of *Buccaniers*, and *Engliſh* Privateers; but when they underſtood we were *French*, and our *French* Captain ſent Two Recommendations to them from a Merchant at St. *Jago*, they were then very well ſatisfy'd, and we had full Freedom of Commerce here alſo.

From hence we came the highth of *Lima*, the Capital Port, if not the Capital City, of *Peru*, lying in the Latitude of Twelve Degrees Thirty Minutes. Had we made the leaſt Pretence of trading here, we ſhould, at leaſt, have had Soldiers put on Board our Ships to have prevented it, and the People would have been forbidden to trade with us upon Pain of Death; but Captain *Merlote* having brought Letters to a principal Merchant of *Lima*, he inſtructed him how to manage himſelf at his firſt coming into the Port; which was to ride without the Town of *Callao*, out of the Command of the Puntals or Caſtles there, and not to come any nearer, upon what Occaſion ſoever, and then to leave the reſt to him.

Upon this the Merchant applied himſelf to the Governor for leave to go on Board the *French* Ship at *Callao*; the Governor underſtood him, and would not grant it by any means; the Reaſon was, Becauſe there had been ſuch a general Complaint by the Merchants from *Chartagena*, *Porto Bello*, and other Places, of the great Trade carried on here with *French* Ships from *Europe*, to the Deſtru-

ction

ction of the Merchants, and to the Ruin of the Trade of the Galleons, that the Governor, or Viceroy of *Peru*, had forbid the *French* Ships landing any Goods.

Now, though this made our Traffick impracticable at *Lima* itſelf, yet it did, by no Means, hinder the Merchants trading with us under Cover, *&c.* but eſpecially when they came to underſtand, that we were not loaden from *Europe*, with Bays, long Ells, Druggets, broad Cloth, Serges, Stuffs, Stockings, Hats, and ſuch like Woollen Manufactures of *France*, *England*, &c. but that our Cargo was the ſame with that of the *Manilla* Ships at *Acapulco*; and that we were loaden with Callicoes, Muſlins, fine wrought *China* Silks, Damaſks, *Japan* Ware, *China* Ware, Spices, *&c.* there was then no with-holding them, but they came on Board us in the Night with Canoes, and ſtaying all Day, went on Shore again in the Night, carrying their Goods to different Places, where they knew they could convey them on Shore without Difficulty.

In this Manner we traded publickly enough, not much unlike the Manner of our Trade at the *Manillaes*; and here we effectually clear'd ourſelves of our whole Cargo, as well *Engliſh* Goods, as *Indian*, to an immenſe Sum. Here our Men, Officers as well as Seamen, ſold their fine Pearl, particularly one large Parcel, containing One hundred Seventy-three very fine Pearls, but of different Sizes, which a Prieſt bought, *as we were told*, to dreſs up the Image of the bleſſed Virgin *Mary*, in one of their Churches.

In

In a Word, We came to a Ballance here; for we ſold every thing, that we had the leaſt Intention to part with; the chief things we kept in Reſerve were, ſome Bales of *Engliſh* Goods; alſo all the Remainder of our Beads and Bugles, Toys, Iron-work, Knives, Scizars, Hatchets, Needles, Pins, Glaſs Ware, and ſuch Things as we knew the *Spaniards* did not regard, and which might be uſeful in our farther Deſigns, of which my Head was ſtill very full. Thoſe, I ſay, We kept ſtill.

Here, likewiſe, we ſold our *Brigantine*, which, though an excellent Sea-boat, as may well be ſuppos'd, conſidering the long Voyage we had made in her, was yet ſo Worm-eaten in her Bottom, that unleſs we would have new ſheath'd her, and, perhaps, ſhifted moſt of her Planks too, which would have taken up a great deal of Time; ſhe was, by no Means, fit to have gone any further, at leaſt, not ſo long a Run as we had now to make, *(viz.)* round the whole *Southern* Part of *America*; and where we ſhould find no Port to put in at (I mean, Where we ſhould have been able to have got any thing done for the Repair of a Ship) 'till we had come home to *England*.

It was propoſed here, To have gone to the Governor or Viceroy of *Peru*, and have obtained his Licenſe or Paſs, to have travers'd the *Iſthmus* of *America*, from Port St. *Maria*, to the River of *Darien*; this we could eaſily have obtain'd under the Character that we then bore *(viz.)* of having the King of *France*'s Commiſſion, and had we been really

all

all *French*, I believe I ſhould have done it; but as we were ſo many *Engliſh* Men, and as ſuch were then at open War with *Spain*, I did not think it a ſafe Adventure, I mean, not a rational Adventure, eſpecially conſidering what a conſiderable Treaſure we had with us.

On the other Hand, As we were now a ſtrong Body of able Sea-men, and had Two ſtout Ships under us, we had no Reaſon to apprehend either the Toil or the Danger of a Voyage round *Cape Horn*, after which, we ſhould be in a very good Condition to make the reſt of our Voyage to *England*; whereas, if we travell'd over the *Iſthmus* of *America*, we ſhould be all like a Company of Freebooters, and Buccaneers, looſe and unſhipp'd, and ſhould, perhaps, run ſome one Way, and ſome another, among the Log-wood Cutters at the Bay of *Campeachy*, and other Places, to get Paſſage, ſome to *Jamaica*, and ſome to *New England*; and, which was worſe than all, ſhould be expoſed to a Thouſand Dangers on Account of the Treaſure we had with us, perhaps, even to that of murthering and robbing one another; and, as Captain *Merlote* ſaid, who was really a *French* Man, It were much more eligible for us, as *French*, or if we had been ſuch, to have gone up to *Acapulco*, and there to ſell our Ships, and get Licenſe to travel to *Mexico*, and then to have got the Viceroy's *Aſſiento*, to have come to *Europe* in the Galleons; but as we were ſo many *Engliſhmen*, it was impracticable; our Seamen alſo being Proteſtants, *ſuch as Seamen generally*

rally are, and bold mad Fellows, they would never have carry'd on a Difguife, both of their Nation, and of their Religion, for fo long a Time as it would have been neceffary to do for fuch a Journey and Voyage.

But befides all thefe Difficulties, I had other Projects in my Head, which made me againft all the Propofals of paffing by Land to the *North-Sea*; otherwife, had I refolved it, I fhould not have much concern'd myfelf about obtaining a Licenfe from the *Spaniards*; for, as we were a fufficient Number of Men to have forced our Way, we fhould not much have ftood upon their giving us leave, or not giving us leave, to go.

But, as I have faid, my Views lay another Way, and my Head had been long working upon the Difcourfe my Men had had with the *Spaniards* at *Baldivia*; I frequently talk'd with the Two *Chilian Indians* which I had on Board, and who fpoke *Spanifh* pretty well, and who we had taught to fpeak a little *Englifh*.

I had taken care that they fhould have all the good Ufage imaginable on Board; I had given them each a very good Suit of Cloaths, made by our Taylor, but after their own Manner, with each of them a Bays Cloak; and had given them Hats, Shoes, Stockings, and every thing they defir'd, and they were mighty well pleas'd, and I talk'd very freely with them about the Paffage of the Mountains, for that was now my grand Defign.

While

While I was coming up the *Chilian* Shore, as you have heard, that is to ſay, At St. *Jago*, at the *Conception*, at *Arica*, and even at *Lima* itſelf, we enquir'd, on all Occaſions, into the Situation of the Country, the Manner of travelling, and what kind of Country it was beyond the Mountains? and we found them all agreeing in the ſame Story; and that paſſing the Mountains of *Les Cordelieras*, for *ſo they call them in* Peru, *though it was the ſame Ridge of Hills as we call the* Andes, was no ſtrange Thing; that there were not One or Two, but a great many Places found out, where they paſs'd as well with Horſes and Mules, as on Foot, and even ſome with Carriages; and in particular, they told us at *Lima*, That from *Potoſi*, and the Towns thereabouts, there was a long Valley, which ran for One hundred and Sixty Leagues in Length *Southward*, and *S. E.* and that it continued, 'till, the Hills parting, it opened into the main level Country on the other Side; and that there were ſeveral Rivers which began in that great Valley, and which all of them run away to the *S.* and the *S. E.* and afterwards, went away *E.* and *E. N. E.* and ſo fell into the great *Rio de la Plata*, and empty'd themſelves into the *North-Seas*; and that Merchants travell'd to thoſe Rivers, and then went down in Boats as far as the Town or City of the *Aſcenſion*, and the *Buenos Ayres*.

This was very ſatisfying, you may be ſure, eſpecially to hear them agree in it, that the *Andes* were to be paſſed (though paſſing them hereabouts, where, I knew, the main

Land

Land from the *Weſt* Shore, where we now were, muſt be at leaſt One thouſand Five hundred Miles broad) was no Part of my Project; but I laid up all theſe Things in my Head, and reſolv'd to go away to the *South* again, and act as I ſhould ſee Cauſe.

We were now got into a very hot Climate, and, whatever was the Cauſe, my Men began to grow very ſickly, and that to ſuch a Degree, that I was once afraid we had got the Plague among us; but our Surgeons, who we all call Doctors at Sea, aſſured me, There was nothing of that among them, and yet we buried Seventeen Men here, and had between Twenty and Thirty more ſick, and, as I thought, dangerouſly too.

In this Extremity, for I was really very much concerned about it, one of my Doctors came to me, and told me, He had been at the City (that is at *Lima*) to buy ſome Drugs and Medicines to recruit his Cheſt, and he had fallen into Company with an *Iriſh* Jeſuit, who he found was an extraordinary good Phyſician, and that he had had ſome Diſcourſe with him about our ſick Men, and, he believed, for a good Word or Two, he could perſuade him to come and viſit them.

I was very loth to conſent to it, for, ſays I to the Surgeon, If he is an *Iriſh* Man, he ſpeaks *Engliſh*, and he will preſently perceive, that we are all *Engliſh* Men, and ſo we ſhall be betray'd; all our Deſigns will be blown up at once, and our farther Meaſures be all broken, and therefore I would not conſent: This I did not ſpeak from the

Fear of any Hurt they could have done me by Force, for I had no Reaſon to value that, being able to have fought my Way, clear out of their Seas, if I had been put to it; But, as I had traded all the Way by Stratagem, and had many conſiderable Views ſtill behind, I was unwilling to be diſappointed by the Diſcovery of my Schemes; or that the *Spaniards* ſhould know upon what a double Foundation I acted, and how I was a *French* Ally and Merchant, or an *Engliſh* Enemy and Privateer, juſt as I pleas'd, and as Opportunity ſhould offer; in which caſe they would have been ſure to have trapann'd me, if poſſible, under the Pretence of the former, and have uſed me, if they ever ſhould get an Advantage over me, as one of the latter.

This made me very cautious, and I had good Reaſon for it too, and yet the Sickneſs and Danger of my Men preſs'd me very hard to have the Advice of a good Phyſician, if it was poſſible; and eſpecially to be ſatisfied whether it was really the Plague or no; for I was very uneaſy about that.

But my Surgeon told me, That as to my Apprehenſion of Diſcovery, he would undertake to prevent it by this Method; Firſt, he ſaid, He found that the *Iriſh* Man did not underſtand *French* at all, and ſo I had nothing to do but to order, That when he came on Board, as little *Engliſh* ſhould be ſpoke in his Hearing as poſſible; and this was not difficult, for almoſt all our Men had a little *French* at their Tongues End, by having ſo many *French* Men on Board of them;

others

others had the *Levant Jargon*, which they call *Lingua Frank*, ſo that, if they had but due Caution, it could not be ſuddenly perceived what Country-men they were.

Beſides this, the Surgeon ordered, That as ſoon as the *Padre* came on Board, he ſhould be ſurrounded with *French* Seamen only, ſome of which ſhould be ordered to follow him from Place to Place, and chop in with their nimble Tongues, upon ſome Occaſion or other, ſo that he ſhould hear *French* ſpoken where-ever he turn'd himſelf.

Upon this, which, indeed, appeared very eaſy to be done, I agreed to let the Doctor come on Board, and accordingly the Surgeon brought him the next Day, where Captain *Merlote* received him in the Cabbin, and treated him very handſomly, but nothing was ſpoken but *French* or *Spaniſh*; and the Surgeon, who had pretended himſelf to be an *Iriſh* Man, acted as Interpreter between the Doctor and us.

Here we told him the Caſe of our Men that were ſick; ſome of them, indeed, were *French*, and others that could ſpeak *French*, were inſtructed to ſpeak to him, as if they could ſpeak no other Tongue, and them the Surgeon interpreted; others who were *Engliſh*, were call'd *Iriſh* Men, and Two or three were allowed to be *Engliſh* Sea-men, pick'd up in the *Eaſt Indies*, as we had Sea-men, we told him, of all Nations.

The Matter, in ſhort, was ſo carry'd, that the good Man, for ſuch I really think he was, had no manner of Suſpicion; and, to

do him Juſtice, He was an admirable Phyſician, and did our Men a great deal of good; for all of them, but Three, recovered under his Hands, and thoſe Three had recovered, if they had not, like mad Men, drank Punch when they were almoſt well, and by their Intemperance, inflam'd their Blood, and thereby thrown themſelves back again into their Fever, and put themſelves, as the *Padre* ſaid of them, out of the Reach of *Medicine*.

We treated this Man of Art with a great deal of Reſpect, made him ſome very handſome Preſents, and particularly ſuch as he could not come at in the Country where he was; beſides which, I ordered he ſhould have the Value of One hundred Dollars in Gold given him; but he, on the other Hand, thanking Captain *Merlotc* for his Bounty, would have no Money; but he accepted a Preſent of ſome Linen, a few Handkerchiefs, ſome Nutmegs, and a Piece of Black Bays, moſt of which, however, he ſaid, he made Preſents of again in the City among ſome of his Acquaintance.

But he had a farther Deſign in his Head, which afterwards he communicated in Confidence to the Surgeon I have mentioned, who convers'd with him, and by him to me, and which was to him, indeed, of the higheſt Importance. The Caſe was this;

He takes our Surgeon on Shore with him one Day from the *Madagaſcar* Ship, where he had been with him to viſit ſome of our ſick Men, and drinking a Glaſs of Wine with him, he told him, He had a Favour to aſk

of

of him, and a Thing to reveal to him in Confidence, which was of the utmoſt Conſequence to himſelf, though of no great Value to him (the Surgeon) and if he would promiſe the utmoſt Secrecy to him on his Faith and Honour, he would put his Life into his Hands, *For*, *Seignior*, ſays he, *it will be no leſs*, *nor would any thing leſs than my Life*, ſays he, *pay for it*, *if you ſhould diſcover it to any of the People here*, *or any where elſe on this Coaſt.*

The Surgeon was a very honeſt Man, and carry'd, indeed, the Index of it in his Face, and the *Padre* ſaid afterwards, He inclin'd to put this Confidence in him, becauſe he thought he ſaw ſomething of an honeſt Man in his very Countenance: After ſo frank a Beginning, the Surgeon made no Scruple to tell him, That ſeeing he inclin'd to treat him with ſuch Confidence, and to put a Truſt of ſo great Importance in him, he would give him all the Aſſurance that was in his Power, that he would be as faithful to him, as it was poſſible to be to himſelf; and that the Secret ſhould never go out of his Mouth to any one in the World, but to ſuch, and at ſuch Time, as he ſhould conſent to and direct. In ſhort, He uſed ſo many ſolemn Proteſtations, that the *Padre* made no Scruple to truſt him with the Secret, which, indeed, was no leſs than putting his Life into his Hands: The Caſe was this, He told him, He had heard them talk of going to *Ireland* in their Return, and as he had been Thirty Years out of his own Country, in ſuch a

remote Part of the World, where it was never likely, that he ſhould ever ſee it again, the Notion he had entertain'd, that this Ship was going thither, and might ſet him on Shore there, that he might once more ſee his Native Country, and his Family and Friends, had fill'd his Mind with ſuch a ſurprizing Joy, that he could no longer contain himſelf; and that, therefore, if he would procure Leave of the Captain, that he might come privately on Board, and take his Paſſage home, he would willingly pay whatever the Captain ſhould deſire of him; but that it muſt be done with the greateſt Secrecy imaginable, or elſe he was undone; for that if he ſhould be diſcovered and ſtopp'd, he ſhould be confin'd in the *Jeſuits* Houſe there, as long as he liv'd.

The Surgeon told him, The Thing was eaſy to be done, if he would give him leave to acquaint one Man in the Ship with it, which was not Captain *Merlote*, but a certain *Engliſh* Man, who was a conſiderable Perſon in the Ship, without whom the Captain did nothing, and who would be more ſecure to truſt, by far, than Captain *Merlote*. The *Padre* told him, That without asking him any Reaſons, ſince he had put his Life in his Hands, he would truſt him with the Management of it, and therefore left it intirely to him.

The Surgeon accordingly brought him on Board to me, and making a Confidence of the whole Matter to me, I turn'd to the *Padre*, and told him in *Engliſh*, giving him my

my Hand, That I would be under all the Engagements and Promiſes of Secrecy, that our Surgeon had been in, for his Security and Satisfaction; That he had merited too well of us, for us to wiſh him any Ill; and, in ſhort, That the whole Ship ſhould be engag'd for his Security. I told him, That as to his coming on Board, and bringing any thing off that belong'd to him, he muſt take his own Meaſures, and anſwer to himſelf for the Succeſs; but that after he was on Board, we would ſink the Ship under him, or blow her up into the Air, before we would deliver him up, on any Account whatever.

He was ſo pleas'd with my frank Way of talking to him, that he told me, He would put his Life into my Hands, with the ſame Freedom as he had done before with my Surgeon; ſo we began to concert Meaſures for his coming on Board with Secrecy.

He told us, There was no need of any Propoſals, for he would acquaint the Head of their Houſe, that he intended to go on board the *French* Ship in the Road, and to go to *St. Jago*, where he had ſeveral Times been in the ſame manner; and that, as they had not the leaſt Suſpicion of him, he was very well ſatisfied, that they would make no Scruple of it.

But his Miſtake in this might have been his Ruin; for tho' had it been a *Spaniſh* Ship, they wou'd not have miſtruſted him, yet when he nam'd the *French* Ship in the Road of *Callao*, they began to queſtion him very ſmartly about it: Upon which he was ob-

lig'd to tell them, That ſince they were doubtful of him, he would not go at all, telling them withal, That it was hard to ſuſpect him who had been ſo faithful to his Vows, as to reſide for near Thirty Years among them, when he might frequently have made an Eſcape from them, if he had been ſo diſpoſed. So for Three or Four Days he made no Appearance of going at all; but having had private Notice from me the Evening before we ſail'd, he found Means to get out of their Hands, came down to *Callao* on a Mule in the Night, and our Surgeon lying ready with our Boat about half a League from the Town, as by Appointment, he took him on Board, with a Negro his Servant, and brought him ſafe to the Ship: Nor had we receiv'd him on Board half an Hour, but, being unmoored and ready to ſail, we put out to Sea, and carry'd him clear off.

He made his Excuſes to me, That he was come away naked, according to his Profeſſion; that he had purpoſed to have furniſh'd himſelf with ſome Proviſions for the Voyage, but that the unexpected Suſpicions of the Head of their College, or Houſe, had oblig'd him to come away in a Manner that would not admit of it; for that he might rather be ſaid to have made his Eſcape, than to have been come fairly off.

I told him, He was very welcome; (And indeed ſo he was, for he had been already more worth to us than ten times his Paſſage came to) and, That he ſhould be entred into immediate Pay, as Phyſician to both the

Ships,

Ships, which I was ſure none of our Surgeons would repine at, but rather be glad of; and accordingly I immediately order'd him a Cabbin, with a very good Appartment adjoining to it, and appointed him to eat in my own Meſs whenever he pleas'd, or by himſelf, on his particular Days, when he thought fit.

And now it was impoſſible to conceal from him, that we were indeed an *Engliſh* Ship, and that I was the Captain in Chief; except, as has been ſaid upon Occaſion of coming to any particular Town of *Spain*; I let him know, I had a Commiſſion to make Prize of the *Spaniards*, and appear their open Enemy, but that I had choſen to treat them as Friends, in a Way of Commerce, as he had ſeen. He admir'd much the Moderation I had uſed, and how I had avoided inriching my ſelf by the Spoil, as I might have done; and he made me many Compliments upon that Head, which I excuſed hearing, and begg'd him to forbear: I told him, We were Chriſtians, and as we had made a very proſperous Voyage, I was reſolved not to do any honeſt Men the leaſt Injuſtice, if I could avoid it.

But I muſt obſerve here, That I did not enter immediately into all this Confidence with him neither, nor all at once, neither did I let him into any Part of it, but under the ſame ſolemn Engagements of Secrecy that he had laid upon us, nor till I was come above Eighty Leagues South from *Lima*.

The

The firſt Thing I took the Freedom to ſpeak to him upon, was this; Finding his Habit a little offenſive to our rude Seamen, I took him into the Cabbin, the very next Day after we came to Sea, and told him, That I was obliged to mention to him what I knew he would ſoon perceive, namely, That we were all Proteſtants, except Three or Four of the *Frenchmen*; and I did not know how agreeable that might be to him: He anſwer'd, That he was not at all offended with that Part; That it was none of his Buſineſs to enquire into any one's Opinion, any farther than they gave him Leave; That if it was his Buſineſs to cure the Souls of Men on Shore, his Buſineſs on Board was to cure their Bodies; and as for the reſt, he would exerciſe no other Function than that of a Phyſician on board the Ship, without my Leave.

I told him, That was very obliging; but that then, for his own Sake, I had a Propoſal to make him, which was, Whether it would be diſagreeable to him to lay aſide the Habit of a Religious, and put on that of a Gentleman, ſo to accommodate himſelf the more eaſily to the Men on board, who, perhaps, might be rude to him in his Habit; Seamen being not always Men of the moſt Manners.

He thank'd me very ſincerely: He told me, He had been in *England* as well as in *Ireland*; and that he went dreſs'd there as a Gentleman, and was ready to do ſo now, if I thought fit, to avoid giving any Offence; and added, that he choſe to do ſo; But then, ſmiling,

ſmiling, ſaid, He was at a great Loſs, for he had no Cloaths. I bad him take no Care about that, for I would furniſh him: And immediately we dreſſed him up like an *Engliſhman*, in a Suit of very good Cloaths, which belong'd to one of our Midſhip-men that died. I gave him alſo a good Wig and a Sword, and he preſently appear'd upon the Quarter-Deck like a grave Phyſician, and was called *Doctor*.

From that Minute, by whoſe Contrivance we knew not, it went current among the Seamen, that the *Spaniſh* Doctor was an *Engliſhman*, and a Proteſtant, and only had put on the other Habit to diſguiſe himſelf, and make his Eſcape to us: And this was ſo univerſally believ'd, that it held to the laſt Day of the whole Voyage; for as ſoon as I met with it, I took Care that no body that had it in their Power would ever contradict it: And as for the Doctor himſelf, he was very glad of it; and when he firſt heard of it, ſaid, Nothing could be more to his Advantage, and that he would take Care to humour it among the Men, as far as lay in his Power.

However, the Doctor took Care of one Thing, and earneſtly deſired we would all be mindful of it, *viz.* That he never offered to go on Shore, whatever Port we came to afterwards, and what he deſired of us, was, that none of the *Spaniards* might, by Enquiry, hear, upon any Occaſion, of his being on board our Ship; but above all, That none of our Men, *the Officers eſpecially*, would ever come ſo much in Reach of the *Spaniards*

on

on Shore, as to put it into their Power to ſeize upon them by Reprizal, and ſo oblige us to deliver him up by Exchange.

I went ſo far with him, and ſo did Captain *Merlote* alſo, as to aſſure him, That if the *Spaniards* ſhould, by any Stratagem, or by Force, get any of our Men, nay, tho' it was our ſelves, into their Hands, yet he ſhould, upon no Conditions whatever, be delivered up. And, indeed, for this very Reaſon we were very ſhy of going on Shore at all; and as we had really no Buſineſs any where but juſt for Water and freſh Proviſions, which we alſo had taken in a very good Store of at *Lima*, ſo, for our Part, we put in no where at all, in the Coaſt of *Peru*, becauſe there we might have been more particularly liable to the Impertinencies of the *Spaniards* Inquiry; As to Force, we were furniſhed not to be in the leaſt apprehenſive of that.

Being thus, I ſay, reſolved to have no more to do with the Coaſt of *Peru*, we ſtood off to Sea, and the firſt Land we made, was a little unfrequented Iſland, in the Latitude of 17 deg. 13 m. where our Men went on Shore in the Boats three or four times to catch Tortoiſes, or Turtles, being the firſt we had met with ſince we came from the *Eaſt-Indies*. And here they took ſo many, and had ſuch a prodigious Quantity of Eggs out of them, that the whole Company of both Ships liv'd on them till within four or five Days of our coming to the Iſland of *Juan Fernandes*, which was our next Port. Some of theſe Tortoiſes were ſo large and ſo heavy, that no ſingle Man could

†

could turn them, and ſometimes, as much as Four Men could carry to the Boats.

We met with ſome bad Weather after this, which blew us off to Sea, the Wind blowing very hard at the *South-Eaſt* ; but it was not ſo great a Wind as to endanger us, tho' we loſt Sight of one another more in this Storm, than we had done in all our Voyage : However, we were none of us in any great Concern for it now, becauſe we had agreed before, that if we ſhould loſe one another, we ſhould make the beſt of our Way to the Iſland of *Juan Fernandes* : And this we obſerv'd now ſo directly, that all of us ſhaping our Courſe for the Iſland, as ſoon as the Storm abated, came in Sight of one another long before we came thither ; which, you may be ſure, was very agreeable to us all.

We were, including the Time of the Storm, Two Hundred and Eighteen Days from *Lima* to the Iſland of *Juan Fernandes*, having moſt of the Time croſs contrary Winds, and more bad Weather than is uſual in thoſe Seas : However, we were all in good Condition, both Ships and Men.

Here we fell to the old Trade of hunting of Goats. And here our new Doctor ſet ſome of our Men to Simpling, that is to ſay, to gather ſome Phyſical Herbs, which he let them ſee afterwards were very well worth their while. Our Surgeons aſſiſted, and ſaw the Plants, but had never obſerv'd the ſame Kind in *England*. They gave me the Names of them ; and 'tis the only Diſcovery in all my Travels which I have not reſerv'd ſo carefully

as

as to publiſh for the Advantage of others, and which I regret the Omiſſion of very much.

While we were here, an odd Accident gave me ſome Uneaſineſs, which, however, did not come to much: Early in the Gray of the Morning, little Wind, and a ſmooth Sea, a ſmall Frigate-built Veſſel, under *Spaniſh* Colours, Pennant flying, appear'd off at Sea, at the Opening of the *N. E.* Point of the Iſland; as ſoon as ſhe came fair with the Road, ſhe lay by, as if ſhe came to look into the Port only, and when ſhe perceiv'd that we began to looſe our Sails to ſpeak with her, ſhe ſtretch'd away to the Northward, and then altering her Courſe, ſtood away *N. E.* uſing Oars to aſſiſt her, and ſo got away.

Nothing could be more evident to us, than that ſhe came to look at us, nor could we imagine any thing leſs; from whence we immediately concluded, that we were diſcover'd, and that our taking away the Doctor had given a great Alarm among the *Spaniards* (as indeed we afterwards came to underſtand it had done). But we came a little while afterwards to a better Underſtanding about the Frigate.

I was ſo uneaſy about it, that I reſolv'd to ſpeak with her if poſſible; ſo I order'd the *Madagaſcar* Ship, which, of the Two, was rather a better Sailer, than our own, to ſtand in directly to the Coaſt of *Chili*, and then to ply to the Northward juſt in Sight of the Shore, till he came into the Latitude of 22; and if he ſaw nothing in all that Run, then

to

to come down again directly into the Latitude of the Iſland of *Juan Fernandes*, but keeping the Diſtance of Ten Leagues off farther than before, and to ply off and on in that Latitude Five Days, and then, if he did not meet with me, to ſtand in for the Iſland.

While he did this, I did the ſame at the Diſtance of near Fifty Leagues from the Shore, being the Diſtance which I thought the Frigate kept in as ſhe ſtood away from me. We made our Cruiſe both of us very punctually, and I found him in the Station we agreed on, and we both ſtood into the Road again from whence we came.

We no ſooner made the Road, but we ſaw the Frigate, as I call'd her, with another Ship, at an Anchor in the ſame Road where ſhe had ſeen us: And it was eaſy to ſee that they were both of them in a great Surprize and Hurry at our appearing, and that they were under Sail in ſo very little Time, as that we eaſily ſaw they had ſlipp'd their Cables, or cut away their Anchors. They fir'd Guns twice, which we found was a Signal for their Boats, which were on Shore, to come on board; and ſoon after, we ſaw Three Boats go off to them; tho', as we underſtood afterwards, they were obliged to leave Sixteen or Seventeen of their Men behind them, who, being among the Rocks catching of Goats, either did not hear the Signals, or could not come to their Boats time enough.

When we ſaw them in this Hurry, we thought it muſt be ſomething extraordinary, and bore down directly upon them, having the Weather-Gage.

They were Ships of pretty good Force, and full of Men; and when they ſaw we were reſolv'd to ſpeak with them, and that there was no getting away from us, they made ready to fight us; and putting themſelves upon a Wind, firſt ſtretching a Head to get the Weather-Gage of us, when they thought they were pretty well, boldly tack'd, and lay by for us, hoiſting the *Engliſh* Antient and Union-Jack.

We had our *French* Colours out till now; but being juſt, as we thought, going to engage, I told Captain *Merlote*, I ſcorn'd to hide what Nation I was of when I came to fight for the Honour of our Country; and, beſides, as theſe People had ſpread *Engliſh* Colours, I ought to let them know what I was; that if they were really *Engliſh*, and Friends, we might not fight by Miſtake, and ſhed the innocent Blood of our own Countrymen; and that if they were Rogues, and counterfeited their being *Engliſh*, we ſhould ſoon perceive it.

However, when they ſaw us put out *Engliſh* Colours, they knew not what to think of it, but lay by a while to ſee what we would do. I was as much puzled as they, for as I came nearer, I thought they ſeem'd to be *Engliſh* Ships, as well by their Bulk as by their Way of Working; and as I came ſtill nearer, I thought I could perceive ſo plainly,

by

by my Glasses, that they were *English* Seamen, that I made a Signal to our other Ship, who had the Van, and was just bearing down upon them, to bring to; and I sent my Boat to him, to know his Opinion: He sent me Word, He did believe them to be *English*; and the more (said he) because they could be no other Nation but *English* or *French*, and the latter he was sure they were not; but since we were the largest Ships, and that they might as plainly see us to be *English*, as we could see them, he said, he was for fighting them, because they ought to let us know who they were first: However, as I had fir'd a Gun to bring him to, he lay by a little till we spoke thus together.

While this was doing we could see one of their Boats come off with Six Oars, and Two Men (a Lieutenant and a Trumpeter it seems they were) sitting in the Stern, and one of them holding up a Flag of Truce: We let them come forward, and when they came nearer, so that we could hale 'em with a Speaking-Trumpet, we ask'd 'em, What Countrymen they were? and they answer'd, *Englishmen*. Then we ask'd them, Whence their Ship? Their Answer was, From *London*. At which we bad them come on Board, which they did; and we soon found, that we were all Countrymen and Friends, and their Boat went immediately back to let them know it. We found, afterwards, that they were mere Privateers, fitted out from *London* also, but coming last from *Jamaica*; and we let them know no other of our selves; but declin'd keeping Company, telling them, We were

bound now upon Traffick, and not for Purchace; That we had been at the *Eaſt-Indies*, had made ſome Prizes, and were going back thither again. They told us, They were come into the *South Seas* for Purchace, but that they had made little of it; having heard there were Three large *French* Men of War in thoſe Seas, in the *Spaniſh* Service, which made them wiſh, that they had not come about; and that they were ſtill very doubtful what to do.

We aſſur'd them, We had been the Heighth of *Lima*; and that we had not heard of any Men of War; but that we had paſs'd for ſuch our ſelves, and perhaps were the Ships they had heard of; for that we were Three Sail at firſt, and had ſometimes carry'd *French* Colours.

This made them very glad; for it was certainly ſo, that we had paſs'd for Three *French* Men of War; and they were ſo aſſur'd of it, that they went afterwards boldly up the Coaſt, and made ſeveral very good Prizes. We then found alſo, that it was one of theſe Ships that look'd into the Road, as above, when we were here before, and ſeeing us then with *French* Colours, took us for the Men of War they had heard of: And they added, That when we came in upon them again, they gave themſelves up for loſt Men, but were reſolv'd to have fought it out to the Laſt, or rather to have ſunk by our Side, or blow themſelves up, than be taken.

I was not at all ſorry that we had made this Diſcovery before we engag'd; for the Captains were two brave reſolute Fellows, and had two very

very good Ships under them, one of Thirty-ſix Guns, but able to have carry'd Forty-four Guns; the other, which we called the Frigate-built Ship, carry'd Twenty-eight Guns, and they were both full of Men. Now, tho' we ſhould not have fear'd their Force, yet my Caſe differ'd from what it did at firſt, for we had that on Board that makes all Men Cowards, I mean Money; of which we had ſuch a Cargo as few *Britiſh* Ships ever brought out of thoſe Seas; and I was one of thoſe that had now no Occaſion to run needleſs Hazards; ſo that, in ſhort, I was as well pleas'd without fighting, as they could be: Beſides, I had other Projects now in my Head, and thoſe of no leſs Conſequence, than of planting a new World, and ſettling new Kingdoms to the Honour and Advantage of my Country; and many a Time I wiſh'd heartily, That all my rich Cargo was ſafe at *London*; That my Merchants were ſharing the Silver, and the Gold, and the Pearl among themſelves; and, That I was but ſafe on Shore, with a Thouſand good Families, upon the South of *Chili*, and about Fifteen Hundred good Soldiers, and Arms for Ten Thouſand more (of which by-and-by) and with the Two Ships I had now with me, I would not apprehend all the Power of the *Spaniards*; I mean, that they could bring againſt me in the *South-Seas*.

I had all theſe Things, I ſay, in my Head already, tho' nothing like to what I had afterwards, when I ſaw farther into the Matter myſelf: However, theſe Things made me very glad,

that I had no Occaſion to engage thoſe Ships.

When we came thus to underſtand one another, we went all into the Road together, and I invited the Captains of the Two Privateers on board me, where I treated them with the beſt I had; tho' I had no great Dainties now, having been ſo long out of *England.* They invited me, and Captain *Merlote*, and the Captain of the *Madagaſcar* Ship, in Return, and indeed treated us very nobly.

After this, we exchang'd ſome Preſents of Refreſhments, and, particularly, they ſent me a Hogſhead of Rum, which was very acceptable; and I ſent them, in Return, a Runlet of Arrack, excuſing myſelf, that I had no great Store. I ſent them alſo the Quantity of One Hundred Weight of Nutmegs and Cloves; but the moſt agreeable Preſent I ſent them, was, Twenty Pieces of my *Madagaſcar* Dryed Beef, cur'd in the Sun, the like of which they had never ſeen or taſted before; and, without Queſtion, 'tis ſuch an excellent Way of curing Beef, that if I were to be at *Madagaſcar* again, I would take in a ſufficient Quantity of Beef ſo preſerv'd, to victual the whole Ship for the Voyage; and I leave it as a Direction to all *Engliſh* Seamen that have Occaſion to uſe *Eaſt-India* Voyages.

I bought afterwards Six Hogſheads of Rum of theſe Privateers, for I found they were very well ſtor'd with Liquors, whatever elſe they wanted.

We ſtay'd here Twelve or Fourteen Days, but took Care, by Agreement, that our Men ſhould

ſhould never go on Shore the ſame Days that their Men went on Shore, or theirs when ours went; as well to avoid their Caballing together, as to avoid Quarreling; tho' the latter was the Pretence. We agreed alſo, not to receive on Board any of our Ships reſpectively any of the Crews belonging to the other: And this was their Advantage, for if we would have given Way to that, half their Men, would, for ought I know, have come over to us.

While we lay here, one of them went a cruizing, finding the Wind fair to run in for the Shore, and in about Five Days ſhe came back with a *Spaniſh* Prize, laden with Meal, Cocoa, and a large Quantity of Biſcuit, ready bak'd; She was bound to *Lima*, from *Baldivia*, or ſome Port nearer; I do not remember, exactly, which: They had ſome Gold on Board, but not much, and had bought their Lading at St. *Jago*. As ſoon as we ſaw them coming in with a Prize in Tow, we put out our *French* Colours, and gave Notice to the Privateers, that it was for their Advantage that we did ſo; and ſo indeed it was, for it would preſently have alarmed all the Country, if ſuch a Fleet of Privateers had appear'd on the Coaſt. We prevail'd with them to give us their *Spaniſh* Priſoners, and to allow us to ſet them on Shore; I having aſſur'd them, I would not land them till I came to *Baldivia*, nor ſuffer them to have the leaſt Correſpondence with any Body till they came thither; the ſaid *Spaniards* alſo giving their Parole of

Honour, not to give any Account of their being taken, till Fourteen Days after they were on Shore.

This being the fartheſt Port *South* which the *Spaniards* are Maſters of in *Chili*, or indeed on the whole Continent of *America*, they could not deſire me to carry them any farther: They allow'd us a Quantity of Meal and Cocoa out of their Booty, for the Subſiſtance of the Priſoners; and I bought a larger Quantity more of it, there being more than they knew how to ſtow; and they did not reſolve to keep the *Spaniſh* Ship which they took; By this Means, I was doubly ſtock'd with Flower and Bread; but as the firſt was very good, and well pack'd in Cask, and very good Jars, it was no Burthen.

We bought alſo ſome of their Cocoa, and made Chocolate till our Men gorg'd themſelves with it, and would eat no more.

Having furniſh'd our ſelves here with Goats Fleſh, as uſual, and taken in Water ſufficient, we left *Juan Fernandes*, and ſaw the Cruiſers go out the ſame Tide, they ſteering *N. N. E.* and we *S. S. E.* They ſaluted us at parting, and we bad them Good-bye in the ſame Language.

While we were now ſailing for the Coaſt of *Chili*, with fair Wind and pleaſant Weather, my *Spaniſh* Doctor came to me, and told me, he had a Piece of News to acquaint me with, which, he ſaid, he believ'd would pleaſe me very well; and this was, That one of the *Spaniſh* Priſoners was a Planter,

as

as 'tis call'd in the *West-Indies*, or a Farmer as we ſhould call it in *England*, of *Villa-Rica*, a Town built by the *Spaniards* near the Foot of the *Andes*, above the Town of *Baldivia*; and that he had entred into Diſcourſe with him upon the Situation of thoſe Hills, the Nature of the Surface, the Rivers, Hollows, Paſſages, into them, *&c.* whether there were any Valleys within the Hills, of what Extent, how watred, what Cattle, what People, how diſpoſed, and the like; and, in ſhort, if there was any paſſing over them: and he told me, in few Words, That he found him to be a very honeſt, frank, open ſort of a Perſon, who ſeem'd to ſpeak without Reſerve, without the leaſt Jealouſy or Apprehenſion; and that, in a Word, he believ'd, I might have an ample Diſcovery from him of all that I deſir'd to know.

I was very glad of this News, you may be ſure; and it was not many Hours before I made him bring the *Spaniard* into the great Cabbin to me, where I treated him very civilly, and gave him Opportunity ſeveral Times, to ſee himſelf very well uſed; and indeed all the *Spaniards* in the Ship were very thankful, for my bringing them out of the Hands of the Privateers, and took all Occaſions to let us ſee it.

I ſaid little the firſt Time, but diſcours'd in general of *America*, of the Greatneſs and Opulency of the *Spaniards* there; the infinite Wealth of the Country, *&c.* and I remember well, diſcourſing once of the great Riches of the *Spaniards* in *America*, the Silver Mines of

Potoſi, and other Places, he turn'd ſhort upon me, ſmiling, and ſaid, We *Spaniards* are the worſt Nation in the World, that ſuch a Treaſure as this could have belong'd to; for if it had fallen into any other Hands than ours, ſays he, they would have ſearch'd farther into it before now. I aſk'd him, What he meant by that? I ſaid, I thought they had ſearch'd it thoroughly enough; for that I believ'd no Nation in the World could ever have ſpread ſuch vaſt Dominions, and planted a Country of ſuch a prodigious Extent, and have not only kept the Poſſeſſion of it, but have maintain'd the Government alſo, and even inhabited it, with ſo few People.

Perhaps, Seignior, ſays he, you think, notwithſtanding that Opinion of yours, that we have many more People of our Nation in *New-Spain* than we have. I do not know, ſaid I, how many you may have; but if I ſhould believe, you have as many here as in *Old-Spain*, it would be but a few in Compariſon of the infinite Extent of the King of *Spain*'s Dominions in *America*: And then, added he, I aſſure you, Seignior, there is not one *Spaniard* to a Thouſand Acres of Land, take one Place with another throughout *New-Spain*.

Very well, ſaid I, then I think the Riches and Wealth of *America* is very well ſearched, in Compariſon to the Number of People you have to ſearch after it: No, ſays he, it is not neither; for the greateſt Number of our People live in that Part where the Wealth is not greateſt; and where even the Governor and

Viceroy,

Viceroy, enjoying a plentiful and luxurious Life, they take no Thought for the Encreaſe, either of the King's Revenues, or the National Wealth: This he ſpoke of the City of *Mexico*, whoſe Greatneſs, and the Number of its Inhabitants, he ſaid, was a Diſeaſe to the reſt of the Body: And what think you, Seignior, ſaid he, that in that one City, where is neither Silver or Gold but what is brought from the Mountains of St. *Clara*, the Mines at St. *Auguſtine*'s and our *Lady*, ſome of which are an Hundred Leagues from it, and yet there are more *Spaniards* in *Mexico* than in both theſe two prodigious Empires of *Chili* and *Peru*?

I ſeem'd not to believe him; and indeed I did not believe him at firſt, till he return'd to me with a Queſtion, Pray, Seignior Capitain, ſays he, how many *Spaniards* do you think there may be in this vaſt Country of *Chili*? I told him, I could make no gueſs of the Numbers; but, without Queſtion, there were many Thouſands; intimating, that I might ſuppoſe near an Hundred Thouſand: At which he laugh'd heartily, and aſſur'd me, That there were not above Two Thouſand Five Hundred in the whole Kingdom, beſides Women and Children, and ſome few Soldiers, which they look'd upon as nothing to Inhabitants, becauſe they were not ſettled any where.

I was indeed ſurpriz'd, and began to name ſome large Places, which I thought had ſingly more *Spaniards* in them than what he talk'd of. He preſently ran over ſome of them; and naming *Baldivia* firſt, as the moſt *Southward*, he aſk'd me, How many I thought were there?

And

And I told him, About Three Hundred Families: He ſmil'd at me, and aſſur'd me, there were not above Three or Four and Fifty Families in the whole Place, and about Twenty-five Soldiers; altho' it was a Fortification, and a Frontier. (At *Villa Rica*, or the Rich Town) where he liv'd, he ſaid, There might be about Sixty Families, and a Lieutenant with Twenty Soldiers. In a Word, we paſs'd over the many Places between, and came to the Capital St. *Jago*, where after I had ſuppoſed there were Five Thouſand *Spaniards*; he proteſted to me, there were not above Eight Hundred, including the Viceroy's Court, and including the Families at *Valpariſo*, which is the Sea-Port, and excluding only the Soldiers, which, as he ſaid, being the Capital of the whole Kingdom, might be about Two Hundred, and excluding the Religious, who, he added, laughing, ſignify'd nothing to the planting a Country, for they neither cultivated the Land, nor increaſed the People.

Our Doctor, who was our Interpreter, ſmil'd at this, but merrily ſaid, That was very true, or ought to be ſo; intimating, that tho' the Prieſts do not cultivate the Land, yet they might chance to increaſe the People a little; but that was by the Way. As to the Number of Inhabitants at St. *Jago*, the Doctor agreed with him, and ſaid, he believ'd he had ſaid more than there was, rather than leſs.

As then to the Kingdom or Empire of *Peru*, in which there are many conſiderable Cities

and

and Places of Note, ſuch as *Lima*, *Quitto*, *Cuſco la Plata*, and others; beſides the great Number of Towns on the Sea-Coaſts, ſuch as Port *Arica*, St. *Miguel*, *Payta*, *Guyaquil*, *Truxillo*, and many others.

He anſwered, That it was true, that the City of *Lima*, with the Town of *Callao*, was much increaſed within a few Years; and, particularly, of late, by the ſettling of between Three and Four Hundred *French* there, who came by the King of *Spain*'s Licenſe; but that before the coming of thoſe Gentlemen, at which he ſhook his Head, the Country was richer, tho' the Inhabitants were not ſo many; and that, take it as it was now, there could not be reckoned above Fifteen Hundred Families of *Spaniards*, excluding the Soldiers, and the Clergy, which, as above, he reckoned nothing as to the planting the Country.

We came then to diſcourſe of the Silver-Mines at *Potoſi*, and here he ſuppoſed, as I did alſo, a very great Number of People; But, Seignior, ſays he, What People is it you are ſpeaking of? There are many Thouſands of Servants, but few Maſters; there is a Gariſon of Four Hundred Soldiers, always kept in Arms, and in good Order, to ſecure the Place, and keep the Negroes and Criminals, who work in the Mines, in Subjection; but, that there were not beſides Five Hundred *Spaniards*, that is to ſay Men, in the whole Place and its Adjacents. So that, in ſhort, he would not allow above Seven Thouſand *Spaniards* in the whole Empire of *Peru*, and Two Thouſand Five Hundred in *Chili*; at the

ſame

ſame Time allowing Twice as many as both theſe in the City of *Mexico* only.

After this Diſcourſe was over, I ask'd him, What he inferr'd from it, as to the Wealth of the Country not being diſcover'd? He anſwer'd, It was evident that it was for want of People that the Wealth of the Country lay hid; That there was infinitely more lay unenquir'd after, than had yet been known; That there were ſeveral Mountains in *Peru* equally rich in Silver with that of *Potoſi*; And as for *Chili*, ſays he, and the Country where we live, there is more Gold at this Time in the Mountains of the *Andes*, and more eaſy to come at, than in all the World beſides: Nay, ſays he, with ſome Paſſion, there is more Gold every Year waſh'd down out of the *Andes* of *Chili* into the Sea, and loſt there, than all the Riches that go from *New Spain* to *Europe* in Twenty Years, amount to.

This Diſcourſe fir'd my Imagination, you may be ſure, and I renewed it upon all Occaſions, taking more or leſs Time, every Day, to talk with this *Spaniard* upon the Subject of Cultivation of the Lands, Improvement of the Country, and the like; always making ſuch Enquiries into the State of the Mountains of the *Andes*, as beſt ſuited my Purpoſe, but yet ſo as not to give him the leaſt Intimation of my Deſign.

One Day, converſing with him again about the great Riches of the Country, and of the Mountains and Rivers, as above, I aſked him, That ſeeing the Place was ſo rich, why

were

were they not all Princes, or as rich as Princes, that dwelt there?

He ſhook his Head, and ſaid, It was a great Reproach upon them many Ways; and when I preſs'd him to explain himſelf, he anſwered, It was occaſioned by Two Things; namely, Pride and Sloth. *Seignior*, ſays he, we have ſo much Pride, that we have no Avarice, and we do not covet enough to make us work for it: We walk about ſometimes, ſays he, on the Banks of the Streams that come down from the Mountains, and if we ſee a bit of Gold lie on the Shore, it may be we will vouchſafe to lay off our Cloak and ſtep forward to take it up; but if we were ſure to carry home as much as we could ſtand under, we would not ſtrip and go to work in the Water to waſh it out of the Sand; or take the Pains to get it together; nor, perhaps, diſhonour ourſelves ſo much as to be ſeen carrying a Load, no, not for all the Value of the Gold itſelf.

I laugh'd then, indeed; and told him, He was diſpoſed to jeſt with his Countrymen, or to ſpeak Ironically; meaning, That they did not take ſo much Pains as was required, to make them effectually rich; but that, I ſuppoſed, he would not have me underſtand him as he ſpoke: He ſaid, I might underſtand as favourably as I pleaſed, but I ſhould find the Fact to be true, if I would go up with him to *Villa Rica*, when I came to *Baldivia*; and with that, he made his Compliment to me, and invited me to his Houſe.

I aſked

I aſked him, with a *Con Licentia*, *Seignior*, that is, With Pardon for ſo much Freedom, That if he lived in ſo rich a Country, and where there was ſo inexhauſtible a Treaſure of Gold, how he came to fall into this State of Captivity ? and what made him venture himſelf upon the Sea to fall into the Hands of Pyrates?

He anſwered, That it was on the very Foot of what he had been complaining of; and that having ſeen ſo much of the Wealth of the Country he lived in, and having reproached himſelf with that very Indolence which he now blamed all his Country-men for, he had reſolved, in Conjunction with Two of his Neighbours the *Spaniards*, and Men of good Subſtance, to ſet to work in a Place in the Mountains where they had found ſome Gold, and had ſeen much waſh'd down by the Water, and to find what might be done in a thorough Search after the Fund or Mine of it, which they were ſure was not far of; and that he was going to *Lima*, and from thence, if he could not be ſupplied, to *Panama*, to buy Negroes for the Work, that they might carry it on with the better Succeſs.

This was a feeling Diſcourſe to me, and made ſuch an Impreſſion on me, that I ſecretly reſolved, That when I came to *Baldivia*, I would go up with this ſincere *Spaniard* (for ſo I thought him to be, and ſo I found him) and would be an Eye-Witneſs to the Diſcovery, which, I thought, was made to my Hand, and which I found now, I could make

more

more effectual than by all the Attempts I was like to make by Second Hand.

From this Time I treated the *Spaniard* with more than ordinary Courtefy, and told him, If I was not Captain of a great Ship, and had a Cargo upon me of other Gentlemens Eftates, he had faid fo much of thofe Things, that I fhould be tempted to give him a Vifit, as he had defired, and fee thofe monftrous Mountains of the *Andes*.

He told me, That if I would do him fo much Honour, I fhould not be obliged to any long Stay; that he would procure Mules for me at *Baldivia*, and that I fhould go, not to his Houfe only, but to the Mountain itfelf, and fee all that I defired, and be back again in Fourteen Days at the fartheft. I fhook my Head, as if it could not be, but he never left importuning me; and once or twice, as if I had been afraid to venture myfelf with him, he told me, He would fend for his Two Sons, and leave them in the Ship as Hoftages for my Safety.

I was fully fatisfied as to that Point, but did not let him know my Mind yet; but every Day we dwelt upon the fame Subject, and I travelled through the Mountains and Valleys fo duely, in every Day's Difcourfe, with him, that when I afterwards came to the Places we had talk'd of, it was as if I had look'd over them in a Map before.

I afked him, If the *Andes* were a mere Wall of Mountains, contiguous and without Intervals and Spaces like a Fortification or Boundary to a Country? Or, Whether they lay

lay promiſcuous and diſtant from one another? And, Whether there lay any Way over them into the Country beyond them.

He ſmil'd when I talk'd of going over them: He told me, They were ſo infinitely high, that no human Creature could live upon the Top; and withal ſo ſteep, and ſo frightful, that if there was even a Pair of Stairs up on one Side, and down on the other, no Man alive would dare to mount up, or venture down.

But that, as for the Notion of the Hills being contiguous, like a Wall that had no Gates, that was all fabulous; that there were ſeveral fair Entrances in among the Mountains, and large, pleaſant, and fruitful Valleys among the Hills, with pleaſant Rivers and Numbers of Inhabitants, and Cattle and Proviſions of all Sorts; and that ſome of the moſt delightful Places to live in, that were in the whole World, were among thoſe Valleys, in the very Center of the Higheſt and moſt Dreadful Mountains.

Well, ſaid I, *Seignior*, but how do they go out of one Valley into another? And whither do they go at laſt? He anſwered me, Thoſe Valleys are always full of pleaſant Rivers and Brooks, which fall from the Hills, and are form'd generally into one principal Stream to every Vale; and that as theſe muſt have their Outlets on one Side of the Hills, or on the other, ſo, following the Courſe of thoſe Streams, one is always ſure to find the Way out of one Valley into another, and at laſt, out of the whole into the open Country; ſo that it was very frequent to paſs from one

Side

Side to the other of the whole Body of the Mountains, and not go much higher up Hill, or down Hill, compared to the Hills in other Places. It was true, he ſaid, There was no abrupt viſible Parting in the Mountains, that ſhould ſeem like a Way cut through from the Bottom to the Top, which would be, indeed, frightful; but that as they paſs from ſome of the Válleys to others, there are Aſcents and Deſcents, Windings and Turnings, Sloaping up, and Sloaping down, where we may ſtand on thoſe little Ridges, and ſee the Waters on one Side run to the *Weſt*, and on the other Side, to the *Eaſt*.

I aſked him, What kind of a Country was on the other Side? and how long Time it would take up to go through from one Side to the other? He told me, There were Ways, indeed, that were more mountainous and uneaſy, in which Men kept upon the Sides or Declivity of the Hills; in which the Natives would go, and guide others to go, and ſo might paſs the whole Ridge of the *Andes* in Eight or Nine Days; but that thoſe Ways were eſteemed very diſmal, lonely and dangerous, becauſe of wild Beaſts; but that through the Valleys, the Way was eaſy and pleaſant, and perfectly ſafe, only farther about; and that thoſe Ways a Man might be Sixteen or Seventeen Days going through.

I laid up all this in my Heart, to make uſe of as I ſhould have Occaſion; but I acknowledge, That it was ſurprizing to me, as it was ſo perfectly agreeing with the Notion that I always entertained of thoſe Moun-

tains, of the Riches of them, the Facility of Accefs to and from them, and the eafy Paffage from one Side to another.

The next Difcourfe I had with him upon this Subject, I began thus; Well, *Seignior*, faid I, We are now come quite through the Valleys and Paffages of the *Andes*, and, methinks, I fee a vaft open Country before me on the other Side; pray tell me, Have you ever been fo far as to look into that Part of the World, and what kind of a Country is it?

He anfwered gravely, That he had been far enough feveral Times, to look at a Diftance into the vaft Country I fpake of; And fuch indeed it is, faid he; and as we come upon the rifing Part of the Hills, we fee a great way, and a Country without End; but as to any Defcriptions of it, I can fay but little, added he, only this, That it is a very fruitful Country on that Side next the Hills: What it is farther, I know not.

I afked him, If there were any confiderable Rivers in it? and which Way they generally run? He faid, It could not be, but that from fuch a Ridge of Mountains as the *Andes*, there muft be a great many Rivers on that Side, as there were apparently on this; and that, as the Country was infinitely larger, and their Courfe, in proportion, longer, it would neceffarily follow, That thofe fmall Rivers would run one into another, and fo form great Navigable Rivers, as was the Cafe in the *Rio de la Plata*, which originally fprung from the fame Hills, about the City

La

La Plata in *Peru*, and ſwallowing up all the Streams of leſs Note, became, by the meer Length of its Courſe, one of the greateſt Rivers in the World: That, as he obſerved, moſt of thoſe Rivers ran rather *South-Eaſtward*, than *Northward*, he believed they ran away to the Sea, a great way farther to the *South*, than the *Rio de la Plata*; but as to what Part of the Coaſt they might come to the Sea in, that he knew nothing of.

This Account was ſo rational, that nothing could be more; and was, indeed, extremely ſatisfactory.

It was alſo very remarkable, That this agreed exactly with the Accounts before given me by the Two *Chilian Indians*, or *Natives*, which I had on Board, and with whom I ſtill continued to diſcourſe as Occaſion preſented; but who, at this Time, I removed into the *Madagaſcar* Ship, to make Room for theſe *Spaniſh* Priſoners.

I obſerved the *Spaniard* was made very ſenſible by my Doctor of the Obligation both he and his Fellow-Priſoners were under to me, in my perſuading the Privateers to ſet them at Liberty, and in undertaking to carry them home to that Part of *Spain* from whence they came; for as they had loſt their Cargo, their Voyage ſeemed to be at an End; The Senſe of the Favour, *I ſay*, which I had done him, and was ſtill doing him, in the civil Treatment which I gave him, made this Gentleman; for ſuch he was in himſelf, and in his Diſpoſition, whatever he was by Family, for that I knew nothing of; I ſay, it made him

exceeding importunate with me, and with my Doctor, who ſpoke *Spaniſh* perfectly well, to go with him to *Villa Rica.*

I made him no Promiſe, but talked at a Diſtance; I told him, If he had lived by the Sea, and I could have failed to his Door in my Ship, I would have made him a Viſit. He returned, That he wiſhed he could make the River of *Baldivia* Navigable for me, that I might bring my Ship up to his Door, and he would venture to ſay, That neither me, nor all my Ship's Company, ſhould ſtarve while we were with him. In the Interval of theſe Diſcourſes, I aſked my Doctor his Opinion, Whether he thought I might truſt this *Spaniard*, if I had a Mind to go up and ſee the Country for a few Days?

Seignior, ſays he, the *Spaniards* are, in ſome Reſpects, the worſt Nation under the Sun; They are cruel, inexorable, uncharitable, voracious, and, in ſeveral Caſes, treacherous; but in Two Things, they are to be depended upon beyond all the Nations in the World, that is to ſay, When they give their Honour to perform any thing; and when they have a Return to make for any Favour received; and here he entertained me with a long Story of a Merchant of *Chartagena*, who, in a Sloop, was Shipwreck'd at Sea, and was taken up by an *Engliſh* Merchant, on Board a Ship bound to *London* from *Barbadoes*, or ſome other of our Iſlands; That the *Engliſh* Merchant, meeting another *Engliſh* Ship bound to *Jamaica*, put the *Spaniſh* Merchant on Board him, paid him for his Paſſage, and obliged

obliged him to ſet him on Shore on the *Spaniſh* Coaſt, as near to *Chartagena* as he could. This *Spaniſh* Merchant could never reſt 'till he found Means to Ship himſelf from *Chartagena* to the *Havana*, on the *Galleons*; from thence to *Cadiz* in *Old-Spain*; and from thence to *London*, to find out the *Engliſh* Merchant, and make him a Preſent to the Value of a Thouſand Piſtoles, for ſaving his Life, and for his civil returning him to *Jamaica*, &c. Whether the Story was true or not, his Inference from it, was juſt; namely, That a *Spaniard* never forgot a Kindneſs; But take it withal, ſays the Doctor, that I believe 'tis as much the Effect of their Pride, as of their Virtue; for at the ſame Time, ſaid he, they never forget an ill Turn, any more than they do a good one; and they frequently intail their Enmities on their Families, and proſecute the Revenge from one Generation to another; ſo that the Heir has, with the Eſtate of his Anceſtors, all the Family Broils upon his Hands as he comes to his Eſtate.

From all this he inferred, That as this *Spaniard* found himſelf ſo very much obliged to me, I might depend upon it, that he had ſo much Pride in him, that if he could pull down the *Andes* for me to go through, and I wanted it, he would do it for me; and that nothing would be a greater Satisfaction to him, than to find ſome way or other how to requite me.

All theſe Diſcourſes ſhortned our Voyage, and we arrived fair and ſoftly (for it was very good Weather, and little Wind) at *Tucapel*,

pel, or the River *Imperial*, within Ten Leagues of *Baldivia*, that is to ſay, Of *Cape Bonifacio*, which is the *North* Point of the Entrance into the River of *Baldivia*; and here I took one of the moſt unaccountable, and, I muſt needs acknowledge, unjuſtifiable Reſolutions, that ever any Commander, intruſted with a Ship of ſuch Force, and a Cargo of ſuch Conſequence, adventured upon before; and which I, by no means, recommend to any Commander of a Ship to imitate; and this was, To venture up into the Country above One hundred and Fifty Miles from my Ship, leaving the Succeſs of the whole Voyage, the Eſtates of my Employers, and the richeſt Ship and Cargo, that ever came out of thoſe Seas, to the Care and Fidelity of Two or Three Men. Such was the unſatisfied Thirſt of New Diſcoveries, which I brought out of *England* with me, and which I nouriſh'd at all Hazards, to the End of the Voyage.

However, though I condemn myſelf, in the main, for the Raſhneſs of the Undertaking, yet let me do myſelf ſo much Juſtice, as to leave it on Record too, That I did not run this Riſque without all the needful Precautions for the Safety of the Ship and Cargo.

And, firſt, I found out a ſafe Place for the Ships to ride; and this, neither in the River of *Tucapel*, nor in the River of *Baldivia*, but in an Opening or Inlet of Water without a Name, about a League to the *South* of *Tucapel*, embayed and ſecured from almoſt all the Winds that could blow: Here the Ships

lay

lay eaſy, with Water enough, having about Eleven Fathoms good holding Ground, and about half a League from Shore.

I left the *Supra-Cargo*, and my chief Mate, alſo a Kinſman of my own, a true Sailor, who had been a Midſhip-man, but was now a Lieutenant: I ſay, To thoſe I left the Command of both my Ships, but with expreſs Orders not to ſtir, nor unmoor, upon any Account whatever, Life and Death excepted, 'till my Return; or 'till, if I was dead, they heard what was become of me; no, though they were to ſtay there Six Months, for they had Proviſions enough, and an excellent Place for watering lay juſt by them; and I made all the Men ſwear to me, that they would make no Mutiny or Diſorder, but obey my ſaid Kinſman in one Ship, and the *Supra-Cargo* in the other, in all Things, except removing from that Place; and that if they ſhould command them to ſtir from thence, they would not ſo much as touch a Sail or a Rope.

When I had made all theſe Conditions, and told my Men, That the Deſign I went upon, was for the Good of their Voyage, for the Service of the Owners, and ſhould, if it ſucceeded, be for all their Advantages; I aſked them, If they were all willing I ſhould go? to which they all anſwered, That they were very willing, and would take the ſame Care of the Ships, and of all Things belonging to them, as if I were on Board. This encouraged me greatly, and I now reſolved nothing ſhould hinder me.

Having thus concluded every thing, then, and not 'till then, I told my *Spaniard*, That I had almoſt reſolved to go along with him; at which he appeared exceedingly pleaſed, and, indeed, in a Surprize of Joy. I ſhould have told you, That before I told him this, I had ſet all the reſt of the Priſoners on Shore, at their own Requeſt, juſt between the Port of *Tucapel*, and the Bay of the *Conception*, except Two Men, who, as he told me, liv'd in the Open Country beyond *Baldivia*, and, as he obſerved, were very glad to be ſet on Shore with him, ſo to travel home, having loſt what little they had in the Ship, and to whom he communicated nothing of all the Diſcourſe we had had of the Affair of the Mountains.

I alſo diſmiſſed now the Two *Chilian Indians*, but not without a very good Reward, proportioned to, not their Trouble and Time only, but proportioned to what I ſeemed to expect of them, and filling them ſtill with Expectations, that I would come again, and take a Journey with them into the Mountains.

And now it became neceſſary, that I ſhould uſe the utmoſt Freedom with my new Friend the *Spaniard*, being, as I told him, to put my Life in his Hands, and the Proſperity of my whole Adventure, both Ship and Ship's Company.

He told me, He was ſenſible that I did put my Life in his Hands, and that it was a very great Token of Confidence in him, even ſuch a one, that he, being a Stranger to me, had no Reaſon to expect; but he de-

ſired

ſired me to conſider, that he was a *Chriſtian*, not a *Savage*; That he was one, I had laid the higheſt Obligation upon, in voluntarily taking him out of the Hands of the Free-booters, where he might have loſt his Life; And, in the next Place, he ſaid, It was ſome Argument, that he was a Gentleman, and that I ſhould find him to be a Man of Honour; and, laſtly, That it did not appear, that he could make any Advantage of me, or that he could get any thing by uſing me ill; and if even that was no Argument, yet I ſhould find, when I came to his Houſe, that he was not in a Condition to want any thing, that might be gained, ſo much as to procure it by ſuch a Piece of Villainy and Treachery, as to betray and deſtroy the Man that had ſav'd his Life, and brought him out of the Hands of the Devil, ſafe to his Country and Family, when he might have been carried away, God knows whither. But, to conclude all, He deſired me to accept the Offer he had made me at Sea (*viz.*) That he would ſend for his Two Sons, and leave them on Board the Ship as Hoſtages for my Safety, and deſired they might be uſed on Board no otherwiſe than I was uſed with him in the Country.

I was aſhamed to accept ſuch an Offer as this; but he preſſed it earneſtly, and importuned the Doctor to move me to accept it, telling him, That he ſhould not be eaſy if I did not; ſo that, in ſhort, the Doctor adviſed me to agree to it; and accordingly he hired a Meſſenger and a Mule, and ſent away for

for his Two Sons to come to him; and ſuch Expedition the Meſſenger made, that in Six Days he returned with the Two Sons, and Three Servants, all on Horſeback. His Two Sons were very pretty well behaved Youths, who appeared to be Gentlemen in their very Countenances; the Eldeſt was about Thirteen Years old, and the other about Eleven. I treated them on Board, as I had done their Father, with all poſſible Reſpect; and having entertained them Two Days, left Order, that they ſhould be treated in the ſame Manner when I was gone; and to this I added aloud (that their Father might hear it) That whenever they had a Mind to go away, they ſhould let them go: But their Father laid a great many ſolemn Charges upon them, that they ſhould not ſtir out of the Ship 'till I came back ſafe; and that I gave them leave; and he made them promiſe, that they would not; and the young Gentlemen kept their Word ſo punctually, that when our *Supra-Cargo*, who I left in Command, offered to let them go on Shore ſeveral Times, to divert them with Shooting and Hunting, they would not ſtir out of the Ship, and did not, 'till I came back again.

Having gone this Length, and made every thing ready for my Adventure, we ſet out, Captain *Merlote*, the *Spaniſh* Doctor, the old Mutineer, that was my Second Mate, and who was now the Captain of the *Madagaſcar* Ship, and myſelf, with Two Midſhip-men, who we took as Servants, but who I reſolved to make the Directors of the main Enterprize.

As

Part II

Pag. 59.

As to the Number, I found my *Spaniard* made no Scruple of that, if it had been half my Ship's Company.

We ſet out, ſome on Horſes, and ſome on Mules, as we could get them, but the *Spaniard* and myſelf rode on Two very good Horſes, being the ſame that his Two Sons came on. We arrived at a Noble Country-Seat about a League ſhort of the Town, where, at firſt, I thought we had been only to put in for Refreſhment; but I ſoon found, that it was really his Dwelling-Houſe, and where his Family and Servants reſided.

Here we were received like Princes, and with as much Ceremony as if he had been a Prince that entertained us: The *Mayor Domo*, or Steward of his Houſe, received us, took in our Baggage, and ordered our Two Servants to be taken care of.

I need not tell you, that the *Spaniard* did all, that Pride and Oſtentation was capable of inſpiring him with, to entertain us; and the Truth is, He could not have lived in a Country in the World more capable of gratifying his Pride; for here, without any thing uncommon, he was able to ſhew more Gold Plate, than many good Families, in our Country, have of Silver; and as for Silver, it quite eclipſes the Appearance, or rather took away the very uſe of Pewter, of which, we did not ſee one Veſſel, no, not in the meaneſt Part of his Houſe: It is true, I believe, the *Spaniard* had not a Piece of Plate, or of any Houſhold Furniture, which we did not ſee, except what belonged to the Apartment

ment of his Wife; and it is to be obſerved, That the Women never appeared, except at a Diſtance, and in the Gardens, and then being under Veils, we could not know the Lady from her Women, or the Maids from the Miſtreſs.

We were lodged every one in ſeparate Apartments, very well furniſhed, but Two of them very nobly, indeed; though all the Materials for Furniture muſt be there at an exceſſive Price. The way of lodging upon Quilts, and in Beds, made *Pavillion*-wiſe, after the *Spaniſh* Cuſtom, I need not deſcribe; but it ſurprized me to ſee the Rooms hung with very rich Tapeſtries, in a Part of the World where they muſt coſt ſo dear.

We had *Chilian* Wine ſerved us up in round Gold Cups, and Water in large Silver Decanters, that held, at leaſt, Five Quarts a Piece, theſe ſtood in our Chamber. Our Chocolate was brought us up in the ſame Manner, in deep Cups, all of Gold, and it was made in Veſſels all of Silver.

It would be troubleſome to the very Reader, to interrupt my Account with the Relation of all the fine Things he had in his Houſe, and I could not be perſuaded, but that he had borrowed all the Plate in the Town to furniſh out his Side-board and Table; but my Doctor told me, It was nothing but what was very uſual among them that were Men of any Subſtance, as it was apparent he was; and that the Silver-Smiths at St. *Jago* ſupplied them generally with their Plate ready wrought, in Exchange (with Allowance for the

the Quality) for the Gold which they found in the Mountains, or in the Brooks and Streams which came from the Mountains, into which the hasty Showers of Winter Rain frequently washed down pretty large Lumps; and others, which were smaller, they washed out of the Sands by the ordinary Methods of washing of Oar.

I was better satisfied in this Particular, when, the next Day, talking to our new Land-lord about the Mountains, and the Wealth of them, I asked him, If he could shew me any of the Gold which was usually washed out of the Hills by the Rain, in the natural Figure in which it was found? He smiled, and told me Yes, he would shew us a little; and with that, carried us up into a kind of a Closet, where he had a great Variety of odd Things, gathered up about the Mountains and Rivers, such as fine Shells, strange Stones in the Form of Stars, heavy Pieces of Oar, but such as neither he, or any of us, could tell what they were, and the like; and after this, he pulled out a great Leather Bag, which had, I believe, near Fifty Pounds weight in it, Here, *Seignior*, says he, here is some of the Dirt of the Earth, and turning it out upon the Table, it was easy to see that it was all Gold, though the Pieces were of different Forms, and some scarce looking like Gold at all, being so mixed with the Sparr, or with Earth, that it did not appear so plain; but in every bit, there was something of the clear Gold to be seen, and the smaller the Lumps, the purer the Gold appeared.

I was

I was ſurprized at the Quantity, more than at the Thing itſelf, having, as I have ſaid, ſeen the Gold which the *Indians* found in the Countries I have deſcribed, which ſeemed to have little or no Mixture; but then I was to have conſidered, That what thoſe *Indians* gathered, was farther from the Hills which it came from, and that thoſe rough, irregular Pieces would not drive ſo far in the Water, but would lodge themſelves in the Earth and Sand of the Rivers nearer home; and alſo, that the *Indians*, not knowing how to ſeparate the Gold by Fire from the Droſs and Mixture above, did not think thoſe rough Pieces worth their taking up, whereas the *Spaniards* here underſtood much better, what they were about.

But to return to the Cloſet; When he had ſhewn us this Leather Pouch full, he ſweeps it by to one Side of the Table, which had Ledges round it, to keep it from running off, and takes up another Bag full of large Pieces of Stone, great Lumps of Earth, and Pieces of various Shapes, all of which had ſome Gold in them, but not to be gotten out but by Fire: Theſe, he told us, their Servants bring them home as they find them in the Mountains, lying looſe here and there, when they run after their Cattle.

But ſtill I aſked him, If they found no Pieces of pure Gold? upon this, he turned to a great old Cabinet full of pretty large Drawers, and pulling out one Drawer, he ſhewed us a ſurprizing Number of Pieces, of pure clean Gold, ſome round, ſome long, ſome flat, ſome

thick,

thick, all of irregular Shapes, and worked roundiſh at the Ends, with rolling along, ſome of theſe weighed a quarter of an Ounce, ſome more, and ſome leſs, and as I lifted the Drawer, I believe there could not be leſs than between Twenty and Thirty Pound weight of it.

Then he pulled out another Drawer, which was almoſt full of the ſame kind of Drug, but as ſmall as Sand, the biggeſt not ſo big as Pins Heads, and which might very properly be called Gold Duſt.

After this Sight, a Man was to be ſurpriz'd at nothing he could ſee; I aſk'd him, How long ſuch a Treaſure might be amaſſing together in this Country? He told me, That was according to the Pains they might take in the Search; That he had been Twelve Years here, and had done little or nothing; but had he had Twenty Negroes to have ſet on Work, as he might have had, he might have had more than this in one Year. I aſk'd him, How much Gold in Weight he thought there might be in all this he had ſhewn me? he told me, He could not tell; That they never troubled themſelves to weigh, but when the Silverſmith at St. *Jago* came to bring home any Veſſel, or, when the Merchants from *Lima* came to *Baldivia* with *European* Goods, then they bought what they wanted of them; That they were ſenſible they gave exceſſive dear for every Thing, even Ten or Twenty for One: But as Gold, he ſaid, was the Growth of that Country, and the other Things, ſuch as Cloth, Linnen, fine Silks, *&c.* were the Gold

of

of *Europe*, they did not think much to give what they ask'd for thoſe Things. In ſhort, I found, that the People in this Country, though they kept large Plantations in their Hands, had great Numbers of Cattle, *Ingenios*, as they call them, for making Sugar, and Land, under Management, for the Maintenance of themſelves and Families; yet did not wholly neglect the getting Gold out of the Mountains, where it was in ſuch Plenty; and therefore it ſeems the Town adjacent is called *Villa Rica*, or *The Rich Town*, being ſeated, as it were, at the Foot of the Mountains, and in the richeſt part of them.

After I had ſufficiently admir'd the vaſt Quantity of Gold he had, he made Signs to the Doctor, That I ſhould take any Piece or any Quantity that I pleaſed; but thought, I might take it as an Affront, to have him offer me any particular ſmall Parcel. The Doctor hinted it to me, and I bad him return him Thanks; but to let him know, that I would by no Means have any of that, but that I would be glad to take up a Piece or Two, ſuch as Chance ſhould preſent to me in the Mountains; that I might ſhew in my own Country, and tell them, that I took it up with my own Hands: He anſwer'd, He would go with me himſelf; and doubted not, but to carry me where I ſhould fully ſatisfy my Curioſity, if I would be content to clamber a little among the Rocks.

I now began to ſee plainly, that I had no manner of Need to have taken his Sons for Hoſtages, for my Safety; and would fain have

ſent

ſent for them back again ; but he would by no Means give me Leave ; ſo I was oblig'd to give that over. A Day or two after, I deſir'd of him, That he would give me Leave to ſend for one Perſon more from the Ships, who I had a great Mind ſhould ſee the Country with me, and to ſend for ſome few Things that I ſhould want, and, withal, to ſatisfy my Men, that I was ſafe and well.

This he conſented to; ſo I ſent away one of the two Midſhip-Men, who I call'd my Servants, and with him Two Servants of the *Spaniard*, my Landlord, as I call'd him, with Four Mules and Two Horſes: I gave my Midſhip-Man my Orders and Directions under my Hand, to my *Supra-Cargo* what to do; for I was reſolv'd to be even with my *Spaniard* for all his good Uſage of me; the Midſhip-Man was gone Ten Days, for they came back pretty well laden, as you ſhall hear, and the Men were oblig'd to come all on Foot.

All the while they were gone, my Landlord and I ſpent in ſurveying the Country, and viewing his Plantation: As for the City of *Villa Rica*, it was not the moſt proper to go there in Publick; and the Doctor knew that as well as the *Spaniard*; and therefore, tho' we went ſeveral Times *incognito*, yet it was of no Conſequence to me, neither did I deſire it.

One Night I had a very ſtrange Fright here, and behav'd my ſelf very much like a Fool about it: The Caſe was this; I wak'd in the Middle of the Night, and chancing to open my Eyes, I ſaw a great Light of Fire, which to me

ſeem'd as if the Houſe, or ſome Part of it, had been on Fire; I, as if I had been at *Wapping* or *Rotherhith*, where People are always terrify'd with ſuch Things, jump'd out of Bed, and call'd my Friend Captain *Merlote*, and cry'd out, Fire, Fire! The firſt Thing I ſhould have thought of, on this Occaſion, ſhould have been, that the *Spaniard* did not underſtand what the Words Fire, Fire! meant; and, that if I expected they ſhould underſtand me, I ſhould have cry'd *Fuego, Fuego!*

However, Captain *Merlote* got up, and my *Madegaſcar* Captain, for we all lay near one another, and with the Noiſe they waked the whole Houſe; and my Landlord, as he afterwards confeſs'd, began to ſuſpect ſome Miſchief; his Steward having come to his Chamber-Door, and told him, that the Strangers were up in Arms; in which Miſtake we might all have had our Throats cut, and the poor *Spaniard* not to blame neither.

But our Doctor coming haſtily in to me, unriddled the whole Matter, which was this, That a Volcano, or Burning Vent among the Hills, being pretty near the *Spaniſh* Side of the Country, as there are many of them in the *Andes*, had flam'd out that Night, and gave ſuch a terrible Light in the Air, as made us think the Fire had at leaſt been in the Out-Houſes, or in part of the Houſe, and accordingly had put me in ſuch a Fright.

Upon this, having told me what it was, he ran away to the *Spaniſh* Servants, and told them what the Meaning of it all was; and bad them go and ſatisfy their Maſter, which

which they did, and all was well again; but as for me, I ſat almoſt all the Night ſtaring out at Window at the Eruption of Fire upon the Hills, and the like Bonfire I had never ſeen before, I aſſure you.

I ſincerely begg'd my Landlord's Pardon for diſturbing his Houſe; and ask'd him, If thoſe Eruptions were frequent? he ſaid, No, they were not frequent, for they were conſtant, either in one Part of the Hills or another; and that in my paſſing the Mountains I ſhould ſee ſeveral of them. I aſk'd him, If they were not alarm'd with them? and if they were not attended with Earthquakes? He ſaid, He believ'd that among the Hills themſelves, they might have ſome Shakings of the Earth, becauſe ſometimes they ſhould find Pieces of the Rocks break off, and fall down; and that it was among thoſe little Fractures that ſometimes Pieces of Stone were found which had Gold interſpers'd in them, as if they had been melted and run together; of which he had ſhewn me ſome: But that as for Earthquakes in the Country, he had never heard of any, ſince he came thither, which had been upwards of Fifteen Years, including Three Years that he dwelt at *St. Jago*.

One Day, being out on Horſeback with my Landlord, we rode up cloſe to the Mountains, and he ſhew'd me at a Diſtance an Entrance, as he call'd it, into them, frightful enough indeed; as you ſhall hear in its Place: Then he told me, That was the Way he intended to carry me when he ſhould go to

ſhew me the higheſt Hills in the World: But he turn'd ſhort, and, ſmiling, ſaid, It ſhould not be yet; for tho' he had promiſed me a ſafe Return, and left Hoſtages for it, yet he had not capitulated for Time.

I told him, He need not capitulate with me for Time; for if I had not Two Ships to ſtay my Coming, and between Three and Four Hundred Men eating me up all the while, I did not know whether I wou'd ever go away again, or no, if he would give me Houſe-room. He told me, As to that, he had ſent my Men ſome Victuals, ſo that they wou'd not ſtarve if I did not come back for ſome Days. This ſurpriz'd me a little, and I diſcovered it in my Countenance. Nay, Seignior, ſays he, I have only ſent them ſome Victuals to maintain my Two Hoſtages; for, you know, they muſt not want. It was not Good-Manners in me to aſk what he had ſent; but I underſtood, as ſoon as my Midſhip-man return'd, that he had ſent down Sixteen Cows or Runts, I know not what to call them, but black Cattle; Thirty Hogs, Thirteen large *Peruvian* Sheep, as big as great Calves; and Three Caſks of *Chilian* Wine, with an Aſſurance, that they ſhould have more Proviſions when that was ſpent.

I was amaz'd at all this Munificence of the *Spaniard*, and very glad I was, that I had ſent my Midſhip-man for the Things I intended to preſent him again; for I was as well able to requite him for a large Preſent as he was to make it, and had reſolv'd it before I knew he had ſent any Thing to the

Ship;

Ship; ſo that this exchanging of Preſents was but a kind of generous Barter or Commerce: For as to Gold, we had either of us ſo much, that it was not at all equal in Value to what we had to give on both Sides, as we were at preſent ſtated.

In ſhort, my Midſhip-man return'd with the Horſes and Servants; and when we had brought what I had ſent for into a Place which I deſired the *Spaniard* to allow me to open my Things in, I ſent my Doctor to deſire the *Spaniard* to let me ſpeak with him.

I told him, firſt, That he muſt give me his Parole of Honour not to take amiſs what I had to ſay to him; That it was the Cuſtom in our Country, at any Time, to make Preſents to the Ladies, with the Knowledge and Conſent of their Huſbands or Parents, without any evil Deſign, or without giving any Offence; but that I knew it was not ſo among the *Spaniards*: That I had not had the Honour yet either to ſee his Lady or his Daughter, but that I had heard he had a Lady and a Daughter alſo: However, that if he pleas'd to be the Meſſenger of a Trifle I had caus'd my Man to bring, and would preſent it for me, and not take it as an Offence, he ſhould ſee before-hand what it was, and I would content my ſelf with his accepting it in their Behalf.

He told me, ſmiling, He did not bring me thither to take any Preſents of me; I had already done enough, in that I had given him his Liberty, which was the moſt valuable Gift in the World; and as to his

Wife, I had already made her the beſt Preſent I was able, having given her back her Huſband; That it is true, it was not the Cuſtom of the *Spaniards* to let their Wives appear in any publick Entertainment of Friends, but that he had reſolv'd to break through that Cuſtom; and that he had told his Wife, What a Friend I had been to her Family, and that ſhe ſhould thank me for it in Publick; and that then, what Preſent I had deſign'd for her, ſince I would be a Maker of Preſents, ſhe ſhould do herſelf the Honour to take it with her own Hands, and he wou'd be very far from miſtaking them, or taking it ill from his Wife.

As this was the higheſt Compliment he was able to make me, the more he was obliging in the Manner; for he returned in about Two Hours, leading his Wife into the Room by the Hand, and his Daughter following.

I muſt confeſs I was ſurpriz'd, for I did not expect to have ſeen ſuch a Sight in *America*. The Lady's Dreſs indeed I cannot deſcribe, but ſhe was really a charming Woman in her Perſon, of about Forty Years of Age, and cover'd over with Emeralds and Diamonds, I mean, as to her Head. She was veil'd till ſhe came into the Room, but gave her Veil to her Woman when her Huſband took her by the Hand. Her Daughter I took to be about Twelve Years old, which the *Spaniards* count Marriageable; She was pretty, but not ſo handſome as her Mother.

After the Compliments on both Sides, my Landlord, as I now call him, told her very handſomely what a Benefactor I had been to her Family, by redeeming him from the Hands of Villains: And ſhe, turning to me, thank'd me in the moſt obliging Manner, and with a modeſt graceful Way of Speech, ſuch as I cannot repreſent, and which, indeed, I did not think the *Spaniards*, who are ſaid to be ſo haughty, had been acquainted with.

I then deſired the Doctor to tell the *Spaniard* her Huſband, That I deſir'd his Lady to accept a ſmall Preſent which my Midſhipman had brought for her from the Ship, and which, *with his Words*, I took in my Hand, and the *Spaniard* led his Wife on to take it: And I muſt needs ſay, It was not a mean Preſent, beſides, its being of Ten Times the Value in that Place, as it would have been at *London*, and I was now very glad that, as I mentioned above, I always reſerved a ſmall Quantity of all Sorts of Goods unſold, that I might have them to diſpoſe of as Occaſion ſhould offer.

Firſt, I preſented her with a very fine Piece of *Dutch* Holland, worth, in *London*, about Seven Shillings an Ell, and Thirty-ſix Ells in Length, and worth in *Chili*, to be ſure, Fifteen Pieces of Eight *per* Ell, at leaſt; or it was rather likely, that all the Kingdom of *Chili* had not ſuch another.

Then I gave her Two Pieces of *China* Damaſk, and Two Pieces of *China* Silks called Atlaſſes, flowered with Gold; Two Pieces of

fine Muslin, one flower'd, the other plain, and a Piece of very fine Chints, or printed Callicoe; also a large Parcel of Spices, made up in blue Papers, being about Six Pounds of Nutmegs, and about twice as many Cloves.

And, lastly, To the young Lady I gave One Piece of Damask, Two Pieces of *China* Taffity, and a Piece of fine striped Muslin.

After all this was delivered, and the Ladies had received them, and given them their Women to hold, I pulled out a little Box, in which I had Two Couple of large Pearls, of that Pearl which I mentioned we found at the Pearl Islands, very well matched for Ear-rings, and gave the Lady one Pair, and the Daughter the other; And now, I think, I had made a Present fit for an Ambassador to carry to a Prince.

The Ladies made all possible Acknowledgment, and we had the Honour that Day to dine with them in Publick. My Landlord, the *Spaniard*, told me, I had given them such a Present, as the Viceroy of *Mexico*'s Lady would have gone Fifty Leagues to have received.

But I had not done with my Host; for, after Dinner, I took him into the same Room, and told him, I hoped he did not think I had made all my Presents to the Ladies, and had nothing left to shew my Respect to him; and, therefore, first I presented him with Three Negroe-men, which I had bought at *Callao* for my own Use, but knew I could supply myself again at or in my way home, at a moderate Price; in the next Place, I

gave

gave him Three Pieces of Black *Colchester* Bays, which, though they are coarſe ordinary Things in *England*, that a Footman would ſcarce wear, are a Habit for a Prince in that Country; I then gave him a Piece of very fine Scarlet *Engliſh* Serge, which was really very valuable in *England*, but much more there; and another Piece of Crimſon Broad-Cloth, and Six Pieces of fine Silk Druggets for his Two Sons, and thus I finiſhed my Preſents. The *Spaniard* ſtood ſtill, and looked on all the while I was laying out my Preſents to him, as one in a Tranſport, and ſaid not one Word 'till all was over; But then he told me very gravely, That it was now time for him to turn me out of his Houſe; For, Seignior, ſays he, no Man ought to ſuffer himſelf to be obliged beyond his Power of Return, and I have no poſſible way of making any Return to you equal to ſuch Things as theſe.

It is true, the Preſent I had made him, if it was to be rated by the Value of Things in the Country where it then was, would have been valued at Six or Seven hundred Pounds Sterling, but to rekon them as they might coſt me, did not all together amount to above One hundred Pounds, except the Three Negroes, which, indeed, coſt me at *Lima* One thouſand Two hundred Pieces of Eight.

He was as ſenſible of the Price of thoſe Negroes, as I was of the Occaſion he had of them, and of the Work he had to do for them; and he came to me about an Hour after, and told me, He had looked over all the Particulars

lars of the noble Preſents which I had made them; and though the Value was too great for him to accept, or for any Man to offer him, yet, ſince I had been at ſo much Trouble to ſend for the Things, and that I thought him worthy ſuch a Bounty, he was come back to tell me, That he accepted, thankfully, all my Preſents, both to himſelf, and to his Wife and Daughter, except only the Three Negroes, and as they were bought in the Country, and were the particular Traffick of the Place, he could not take them as a Preſent; but would be equally obliged, and take it for as much a Favour, if I would allow him to pay for them.

I ſmiled, and told him, He and I would agree upon that; for he did not yet know what Favours I had to aſk of him, and what Expence I ſhould put him to; That I had a great Deſign in my View, which I was to crave his Aſſiſtance in, and which I had not yet communicated to him, in which he might, perhaps, find, that he would pay dear enough for all the little Preſents I had made him; and, in the mean time, to make himſelf eaſy as to the Three Negroe-men, I gave him my Word, that he ſhould pay for them; only not yet.

He could have nothing to object againſt an Offer of this kind, becauſe he could not gueſs what I meant; but gave me all the Aſſurances of Service and Aſſiſtance that lay in his Power, in any thing that I might have to do in that Country.

But here, by the way, you are to underſtand, that all this was carry'd on with a Suppoſition, that we acted under a Commiſſion from the King of *France*; and though he knew many of us were *Engliſh*, and that I was an *Engliſhman* in particular, yet, as we had ſuch a Commiſſion, and produced it, we were *Frenchmen*, in that Senſe, to him, nor did he entertain us upon any other Foot.

The Sequel of the Story will alſo make it ſufficiently appear, That I did not make ſuch Preſents as theſe in meer Oſtentation, or only upon the Compliment of a Viſit to a *Spaniſh* Gentleman, any more than I would leave my Ship, and a Cargo of ſuch Value, in the manner I had done, to make a Tour into the Country, if had not had Views ſufficient to juſtify ſuch Beginnings; and the Conſequence of theſe Things, will be the beſt Apology for me, to thoſe who ſhall have Patience to put them all together.

We had now ſpent a Fortnight, and ſomething more, in Ceremony and Civilities, and in, now and then, taking a little Tour about the Fields, and towards the Mountains. However, even in this way of living, I was not ſo idle as I ſeemed to be, for I not only made due Obſervations of all the Country which I ſaw, but informed myſelf ſufficiently of the Parts which I did not ſee. I found the Country not only fruitful in the Soil, but wonderful temperate and agreeable in its Climate. The Air, though hot, according to its proper Latitude, yet that Heat ſo moderated

derated by the cool Breezes from the Mountains, that it was rather equal to the plain Countries in other Parts of the World, in the Latitude of Fifty, than to a Climate in Thirty-eight to Forty Degrees.

This gave the Inhabitants the Advantages, not only of pleaſant and agreeable living, but alſo of a particular Fertility, which hot Climates are not bleſſed with, eſpecially as to Corn, the moſt neceſſary of all Productions, ſuch as Wheat, I mean *European* Wheat, or *Engliſh* Wheat, which grew here as well and as kindly, as in *England*; which in *Peru*, and in the *Iſthmus* of *America*, will by no means thrive for want of Moiſture and Cold.

Here were, alſo, an excellent middling Breed of Black Cattle, which they fed under the Shade of the Mountains, and on the Banks of the Rivers, 'till they came to be very fat. In a Word, here were, or might be produced, all the Plants, Fruits, and Grain, of a temperate Climate. At the ſame Time, the Orange, Limon, Citron, Pomegrenate, and Figs, with a moderate Care, would come to a very tolerable Perfection in their Gardens; and even Sugar-Canes, in ſome Places, though theſe laſt but rarely, and not without great Art in the Cultivation, and chiefly in Gardens.

They aſſured me, That farther *Southward* beyond *Baldivia*, and to the Latitude of Forty-ſeven to Forty-nine, the Lands were eſteemed richer than where we now were; the Graſs more ſtrengthening and nouriſhing for

for the Cattle; and that, consequently, the Black Cattle, Horses, and Hogs, were all of a larger Breed; but that, as the *Spaniards* had no Settlement beyond *Baldivia* to the *South*, so they did not find the Natives so tractable as where we then were; where, though the *Spaniards* were but few, and the Strength they had, was but small, yet, as upon any Occasion, they had always been assisted with Forces sufficient from St. *Jago*, and, if need were, even from *Peru*, so the Natives had always been subdued, and had found themselves obliged to submit; and that now they were intirely reduced, and were, and had been, for several Years, very easy and quiet: Besides the plentiful Harvest which they made of Gold from the Mountains (which appeared to be the great Allurement of the *Spaniards*) had drawn them rather to settle here, than farther *Southward*, being naturally addicted, as my new Landlord confessed to me, to reap the Harvest which had the least Labour and Hazard attending it, and the most Profit.

Not but that, at the same Time, he confessed, That he believed, and had heard, that there was as much Gold to be found farther to the *South*, as far as the Mountains continued; but that, as I have said, the Natives were more troublesome, and more dangerous, than where they now lived; and that the King of *Spain* did not allow Troops sufficient to civilize and reduce them.

I aſked him concerning the Natives in the Country where we were? he told me, They were the moſt quiet, and inoffenſive People, ſince the *Spaniards* had reduced them by Force, that could be deſired; That they were not, indeed, Numerous, or Warlike, the Warlike and Obſtinate Part of them having fled farther off to the *South*, as they were overpowered by the *Spaniards*; That for thoſe that were left, they lived ſecure, under the Protection of the *Spaniſh* Governor; That they fed Cattle, and planted the Country, and ſold the Product of their Lands very much to the *Spaniards*; but that they did not covet to be rich, only to obtain Cloaths, Arms, Powder and Shot; which, however, they let them have but ſparingly, and with good Aſſurance of their Fidelity. I aſked him, If they were not treacherous and perfidious? And if it was not dangerous truſting themſelves among them in the Mountains, and among the retired Places where they dwelt? he told me, That it was quite the contrary; that they were ſo honeſt, and ſo harmleſs, that he would at any Time venture to ſend his Two Sons into the Mountains a Hunting, with each of them a *Chilian* for his Guide, and let them ſtay with the ſaid Natives Two or Three Nights and Days at a Time, and be in no Uneaſineſs about them; and that none of them were ever known to do any foul or treacherous thing by the *Spaniards*, ſince he had been in that Country.

Having thus fully informed myſelf of Things, I began now to think it was high Time to ſee the main Sight which I came to enquire after (*viz.*) The Paſſages of the Mountains, and the Wonders that were to be diſcovered on the other Side; and accordingly I took my Patron the *Spaniard* by himſelf, and told him, That as I was a Traveller, and was now in ſuch a remote Part of the World, he could not but think I ſhould be glad to ſee every thing extraordinary, that was to be ſeen; that I might be able to give ſome Account of the World when I came into *Europe*, better, and differing from what others had done, who had been there before me; and that I had a great mind, if he would give me his Aſſiſtance, to enter into the Paſſages and Valleys which he had told me ſo much of in the Mountains, and, if it was poſſible, *which, indeed, I had always thought it was not*, to take a Proſpect of the World on the other Side.

He told me, It was not a light Piece of Work, and, perhaps, the Diſcoveries might not anſwer my Trouble, there being little to be ſeen but ſteep Precipices, unhoſpitable Rocks, and unpaſſable Mountains, immuring us on every Side, innumerable Rills and Brooks of Water falling from the Clifts, making a barbarous and unpleaſant Sound; and that Sound eccho'd and reverberated from innumerable Cavities and Hollows among the Rocks, and theſe all pouring down into one Middle Stream, which we ſhould always find on one Side or other of us as we went,

and

and that ſometimes, we ſhould be obliged to paſs thoſe middle Streams, as well as the Rills and Brooks on the Sides, without a Bridge, and at the Expence of pulling off our Cloaths.

He told us, That we ſhould meet, indeed, with Proviſions enough, and with an innocent harmleſs People, who, according to their Ability, would entertain us very willingly; but that I who was a Stranger, would be ſorely put to it for Lodging, eſpecially for ſo many of us.

However, he ſaid, as he had, perhaps, at firſt, raiſed this Curioſity in me, by giving me a favourable Account of the Place, he would be very far from diſcouraging me now; and that if I reſolved to go, he would not only endeavour to make every thing as pleaſant to me as he could, but that he and his *Mayor Domo* would go along with me, and ſee us ſafe through, and ſafe home again; but deſired me, not to be in too much haſte, for that he muſt make ſome little Preparation for the Journey, which, as he told us, might, perhaps, take us up Fourteen or Sixteen Days forward, and as much backagain; Not, he ſaid, that it was neceſſary that we ſhould be ſo long going and coming, as that he ſuppoſed I would take time to ſee every thing which I might think worth ſeeing, and not be in ſo much haſte, as if I was ſent Expreſs. I told him, He was very much in the right; That I did not deſire to make a thing, which I expected ſo much Pleaſure in, be a Toil to me more than needs muſt; and above all, that, as

I ſup-

I ſuppoſed, I ſhould not return into theſe Parts very ſoon, I would not take a curſory View of a Place, which I expected would be ſo well worth ſeeing, and let it be known to all I ſhould ſpeak of it to, that I wanted to ſee it again, before I could give a full Account of it.

Well, *Seignior*, ſays he, we will not be in haſte, or view it by halves; for if wild and uncouth Places will be a Diverſion to you, I promiſe myſelf your Curioſity ſhall be fully gratify'd; but as to extraordinary Things, Rarities in Nature, and ſurprizing Incidents which Foreigners expect, I cannot ſay much to that. However, what think you, Seignior, ſays he, if we ſhould take a Tour a little way into the Entrance of the Hills, which I ſhewed you the other Day, and look upon the Gate of this Gulph? Perhaps your Curioſity may be ſatisfy'd with the Firſt Day's Proſpect, which, I aſſure you, will be none of the moſt pleaſant, and you may find yourſelf ſick of the Enterprize.

I told him, No; I was ſo reſolved upon the Attempt, ſince he, who, I was ſatisfy'd, would not deceive me, had repreſented it as ſo feazible, and eſpecially ſince he had offered to conduct me through it, that I would not, for all the Gold that was in the Mountains, lay it aſide. He ſhook his Head at that Expreſſion, and ſmiling at the Doctor, ſays he, This Gentleman little thinks that there is more Gold in theſe Mountains, nay, even in this Part where we are, than there is now above Ground in the whole World: Partly un-

derſtanding what he ſaid, I anſwered, My Meaning was, To let him ſee, that nothing could divert me from the purpoſe of viewing the Place, unleſs he himſelf forbid me, which, I hoped he would not; and that as for looking a little way into the Paſſage, to try if the Horror of the Place would put a Check to my Curioſity, I would not give him that Trouble, ſeeing the more terrible and frightful, the more difficult and impracticable it was, provided it could be maſter'd at laſt, the more it would pleaſe me to attempt and overcome it.

Nay, nay, Seignior, *ſaid he pleaſantly*, there's nothing difficult or impracticable in it, nor is it any thing but what the Country-People, and even ſome of our Nation, perform every Day; and that, not only by themſelves, either for Sport in purſuit of Game, but even with Droves of Cattle, which they go with from Place to Place, as to a Market, or a Fair; and, therefore, if the Horror of the Clifts and Precipices, the Noiſes of the *Volcanos*, the Fire, and ſuch Things as you may ſee and hear above you, will not put a Stop to your Curioſity, I aſſure you, you ſhall not meet with any thing unpaſſable or impracticable below, nor any thing but what, with the Aſſiſtance of God, and the Bleſſed Virgin (*and then he croſſed himſelf, and ſo we did all*) we ſhall go chearfully over.

Finding, therefore, that I was thus reſolutely bent upon the Enterprize, but not in the leaſt gueſſing at my Deſign, he gave Order to have Servants and Mules provided,

for

for Mules are much fitter to travel among the Hills than Horſes; and in Four Days he promiſed to be ready for a March.

I had nothing to do in all theſe Four Days, but to walk abroad, and, as we ſay, look about me; but I took this Opportunity to give Inſtructions to my Two Midſhip-men, who were called my Servants, in what they were to do.

Firſt, I charged them to make Land-marks, Bearings, and Beacons, as we might call them, upon the Points of the Rocks above them; and at every Turning in the Way below them, alſo at the Reaches and Windings of the Rivers or Brooks, Falls of Water, and every thing remarkable; and to keep each of them ſeparate and diſtinct Journals of thoſe Things; not only to find the Way back again by the ſame Steps; but that they might be able to find that Way afterwards by themſelves, and without Guides, which was the Bottom and true Intent of all the reſt of my Undertaking; and as I knew theſe were both capable to do it, and had Courage and Fidelity to undertake it, I had ſingled them out for the Attempt, and had made them fully acquainted with my whole Scheme, and, conſequently, they knew the Meaning and Reaſon of my preſent Diſcourſe with them: They promiſed not to fail to ſhew me a Plan of the Hills, with the Bearings of every Point, one with another, where every Step was to be taken, and every Turning to the Right Hand, or to the Left, and ſuch a Journal, I believe, was never ſeen before, or ſince; but

'tis too long for this Place. I ſhall, however, take out the Heads of it as I go along, which may ſerve as a general Deſcription of the Place.

The Evening of the Fourth Day, as he had appointed, my Friend the *Spaniard* let me know, That he was ready to ſet out, and accordingly we began our Cavalcade: My Retinue conſiſted of Six, as before, and we had Mules provided for us; my Two Midſhip-men, as Servants, had Two Mules given them alſo for their Baggage: the *Spaniard* had Six alſo, *viz.* His Gentleman, or, *as I called him before*, his MAYOR DOMO, on Horſe-back, that is to ſay, On Mule-back, with Mules for his Baggage, and Four Servants on Foot. Juſt before we ſet out, his Gentleman brought every one of us a Fuzee, and our Two Servants, each a Harquebuſh, or ſhort Muſket, with Cartouches, Powder and Ball, and adjoyned a Pouch with ſmall Shot, ſuch as we call Swan-Shot, for Fowls, or Deer, as we ſaw Occaſion.

I was as well pleaſed with this, as with any thing, becauſe I had not ſo intire a Confidence in the Native *Chilians*, as he had; but I ſaw plainly, ſome Time after, that I was wrong in that, for nothing could be more honeſt, quiet, and free from Deſign, than thoſe People, except the poor honeſt People where we dreſſed up the King and Queen, as above.

We were late in the Morning before we got out, having all this Equipage to furniſh, and travelling very gently, it was about Two

Hours

Hours before Sun-ſet, when we came to the Entrance of the Mountains, where, to my Surprize, I found we were to go in upon a Level, without any Aſcent, at leaſt, that was conſiderable: We had, indeed, gone up upon a pretty ſharp Aſcent, for near Two Miles, before we came to the Place.

The Entrance was agreeable enough, the Paſſage being near Half a Mile broad. On the Left Hand, was a ſmall River, whoſe Channel was deep, but the Water ſhallow, there having been but little Rain for ſome Time; the Water ran very rapid, and, as my *Spaniard* told me, was ſometimes exceeding fierce; the Entrance lay inclining a little *South*, and was ſo ſtraight, that we could ſee near a Mile before us; but the prodigious Height of the Hills on both Sides, and before us, appearing one over another, gave ſuch a Proſpect of Horror, that, I confeſs, it was frightful at firſt to look on the ſtupendous Height of the Rocks: Every thing before us looking one higher than another, was amazing; and to ſee how, in ſome Places, they hung over the River, and over the Paſſage, it threatned a Man with being, ſome Time or other, ſwallowed up.

The Rocks and Precipices on our Right Hand, had, here and there vaſt Clefts and Entrances, which looked as if they had been different Thorough-fairs; but when we came to look full into them, we could ſee them cloſe up at the farther End, and go off in Slopes, and with Gullies made by the Water, which, in haſty Rains, came pouring down

from the Hills, and which, at a Diſtance, made ſuch Noiſes, as 'tis impoſſible to conceive, unleſs by having ſeen and heard the like; for the Water falling ſometimes from a Height Twenty Times as high as the Monument, and, perhaps, much more, and meeting in the Paſſage with many Daſhes and Interruptions, 'tis impoſſible to deſcribe how, the Sound croſſing, and interfering, mingled itſelf, and the ſeveral Noiſes ſunk one into another, increaſing the Whole, as the many Waters joining, increaſed the main Stream.

We entred this Paſſage about Two Miles the firſt Night: After the firſt Length, which, as I ſaid, held about Three Quarters of a Mile, we turned away to the *South*, ſhort on the Right Hand; the River leaving us, ſeemed to come through a very narrow, but deep, Hollow of the Mountains, where there was little more Breadth at the Bottom, than the Channel took up, though the Rocks gave back as they aſcended, as placed in ſeveral Stages, though all horrid and irregular, and we could ſee nothing but Blackneſs and Terror all the Way. I was glad our Way did not turn on that Side, but wondred, that we ſhould leave the River, and the more, when I found, that in the Way we went, having firſt mounted gently a green pleaſant Slope, when it declined again, we found, as it were, a New Rivulet began in the Middle, and the Water ran *S. E.* or thereabouts: This made me begin to aſk, If the Water went away into the New World beyond the Hills? My Patron ſmiled, and ſaid, No, Seignior, not

yet;

yet; we ſhall meet with the other River again very quickly; and ſo we found it the next Morning.

When we came a little farther, we found the Paſſage open, and we came to a very pleaſant Plain, which declined a little gradually, widening to the Left, or *Eaſt* Side; On the Right Side of this, we ſaw another vaſt Opening like the firſt, which went in about Half a Mile, and then clos'd up as the firſt had done, ſloping up to the Top of the Hills a moſt monſtrous, inconceivable Height.

My Patron ſtopping here, and getting down, or alighting from his Mule, gave him to his Man, and aſking me to alight, told me, This was the firſt Night's Entertainment I was to meet with in the *Andes*, and hoped I was prepared for it. I told him, That I might very well conſent to accept of ſuch Entertainment, in a Journey of my own contriving, as he was content to take up with in Compliment to me.

I looked round me, to ſee if there were any Huts or Cots of the Mountaniers thereabouts, but I perceived none; only I obſerved ſomething like a Houſe, and it was really a Houſe of ſome of the ſaid Mountaniers upon the Top of a Precipice as high from where we ſtood, as the Top of the Cupulo of St. *Paul*'s, and I ſaw ſome living Creatures, whether Men or Women, I could not tell, looking from thence down upon us: However, I underſtood afterwards, That they had Ways to come at their Dwelling, which were very eaſy and agreeable, and had Lanes and

Plains where they fed their Cattle, and had every thing growing that they desired.

My Patron making a kind of an Invitation to me to walk, took me up that dark Chasm, or Opening on the Right Hand, which I have just mentioned; Here, Sir, said he, if you will venture to walk a few Steps, 'tis likely we may shew you some of the Product of this Country; but as it grew towards Night, he added, But I see it is too dark; perhaps we may do it in the Morning: And with this, we walked back towards the Place where we left our Mules and Servants, and when we came thither, there was a complete Camp fixed, Three very handsome Tents raised, and a Bar set up at a Distance, where the Mules were tyed one to another to graze, and the Servants, and the Baggage, lay together with an open Tent over them.

My Patron led me into the First Tent, and told me, He was obliged to let me know, That I must make shift with that Lodging, the Place not affording any better.

Here we had Quilts laid very artificially and clever, for me and my Three Comerades, and we lodged very comfortably; but before we came to that, we had the Third Tent to go to, in which there was a very handsome Table, covered with all Conveniencies, and, in a Word, with a cold Treat, that is to say, Cold roasted Mutton and Beef, very well dress'd; and after that, some Potted or Baked Venison, with Pickles, Conserves, and very fine Sweetmeats.

Here

Here we eat very freely, but he bid us depend upon it, That we ſhould not fare ſo well the next Night; and ſo it would be worſe every Night, 'till we came to lie intirely at a *Mountanier's*; but he was better to us than he pretended.

In the Morning, we had our Chocolate as regularly as we uſed to have it in his own Houſe, and we were up, and ready to travel, in a Moment. We went winding now from the *S. E.* to the Left, 'till our Courſe looked *E.* by *N.* when we came again to have the River in View. But I ſhould have obſerved here, That my Two Midſhip-men, and Two of my Patron's Servants, had, by his Direction, been, very early in the Morning, clambering up the Rocks in the Opening on the Right Hand, and had come back again about a Quarter of an Hour after we ſet out; when, miſſing my Two Men, I enquired for them, and my Patron ſaid, They were coming; for, it ſeems, he ſaw them at a Diſtance, and ſo we halted for them.

When they were come almoſt up to us, he call'd to his Men in *Spaniſh* to aſk, If they had had *Una bon Vejo*? They anſwer'd, *Poco, Poco*: And when they came quite up, one of my Midſhip-Men ſhew'd me Three or Four ſmall Bits of clean perfect Gold, which they had pick'd up in the Hill or Gullet where the Water trickled down from the Rocks; and the *Spaniard* told them, That had they had Time, they ſhould have found much more, the Water being quite down, and no Body having

been there ſince the laſt hard Rain. One of the *Spaniards* had Three ſmall Bits in his Hand alſo; I ſaid nothing for the preſent, but charg'd my Midſhip Men to mark the Place, and ſo we went on.

We follow'd up the Stream of this Water for Three Days more, encamping every Night as before; in which Time we paſs'd by ſeveral ſuch Openings into the Rocks, on either Side. On the Fourth Day we had the Proſpect of a very pleaſant Valley and River below us on the *North* Side; keeping its Courſe almoſt in the Middle; the Valley reaching near Four Miles in Length, and in ſome Places near Two Miles broad.

This Sight was perfectly ſurprizing, becauſe here we found the Vale fruitful, level, and inhabited, there being ſeveral ſmall Villages or Cluſters of Houſes, ſuch as the *Chilians* live in, which are low Houſes, cover'd with a Kind of Sedge, and ſhelter'd with little Rows of thick grown Trees, of what Kind we knew not.

We ſaw no Way thro', nor which Way we were to go out; but ſaw it every where bounded with prodigious Mountains, look to which Side of the Valley we would: We kept ſtill on the Right, which was now the *South-Eaſt Side* of the River, and, as we followed it up the Stream, it was ſtill leſs than at firſt, and leſſened every Step we went, becauſe of the Number of Rills we left behind us: And here we encamped the Fifth Time, and all this while the *Spaniſh* Gentleman victuelled us: Then we turned again to the Right, where we had a new and beau-

tiful

tiful Profpect of another Valley, as broad as the other, but not above a Mile in length.

After we were thro' this Valley, my Patron rides up to a poor little Cottage of a *Chilian Indian*, without any Ceremony, and calling us all about him, told us, That there we would go to Dinner: We faw a Smoke indeed *in* the Houfe, rather than come *out* of it; and it fmother'd thro' a Hole in the Roof inftead of a Chimney: However to this Houfe, as to an Inn, my Patron had fent away his *Mayor Domo* and another Servant, and there, they were as bufy as Two Cooks, boiling and ftewing Goats Flefh, and Fowls, making us Soup, Broth, and fuch Hodge-Podge, as it feems they were us'd to provide, and which, however homely the Cottage was, we found very favoury and good.

Immediately a loofe Tent was pitch'd, and we had our Table fet up, and Dinner ferv'd in, and within about Two Hours, we had eaten it, repos'd ourfelves after it (as the Cuftom there is) and were ready to travel again.

I had Room all this while to obferve, and wonder at the admirable Structure of this Place, which may ferve, in my Opinion, for the Eighth Wonder of the World; that is to fay, fuppofing there were but Seven before. We had in the Middle of the Day, indeed, a very hot Sun, and the Reflection from the Mountains made it ftill hotter; but the Heighth of the Rocks on every Side began to caft long Shadows before Three a Clock, except where the Openings look'd toward the Weft, and as foon as thofe Shadows reach'd us,

the cool Breezes of the Air came naturally on, drawing every Way exceeding pleaſant and refreſhing.

The Place we were in, was green and flouriſhing, and the Soil well cultivated by the poor induſtrious *Chilians*, who liv'd here in perfect Solitude, and pleas'd with their Liberty from the Tyranny of the *Spaniards*, who very ſeldom viſited them, and never moleſted them, being pretty much out of their Way, except when they came for Hunting and Diverſion; and then they uſed the *Chilians* always civilly, becauſe they were oblig'd to them for their Aſſiſtance in their Diverſions; the *Chilians* of thoſe Valleys being very active, ſtrong, and nimble Fellows.

By this Means, moſt of them were furniſh'd with Fire-Arms, Powder, and Shot, and were very good Marks-Men; but as to Violence againſt any Body, they entertained no Thought of that Kind, as I could perceive, but were content with their Way of Living, which was eaſy and free.

The Tops of the Mountains here, the Valleys being ſo large, were much plainer to be ſeen, than where the Paſſages were narrow; for there the Heighth was ſo great, that we could ſee nothing. Here, at ſeveral Diſtances (the Rocks towring one over another) we might ſee Smoak come out of ſome, *Snow* lying upon others, Trees and Buſhes growing upon others; and Goats, wild Aſſes, and other Creatures, which we could hardly diſtinguiſh, running about on others.

When

Part II. *Pag. 93.*

When we had paſs'd thro' this ſecond Valley, I perceiv'd we came to a narrower Paſſage, and ſomething like the firſt; the Entrance into it indeed was ſmooth, and above a Quarter of a Mile broad, and it went winding away to the *North*, and then again turn'd round to the *N. E.* afterwards almoſt due *Eaſt*, and then to the *S. E.* and ſo to *S. S. E.* and this frightful narrow Straight, with the hanging Rocks almoſt cloſing together on the Top, whoſe Heighth we could neither ſee or gueſs at, continued about Three Days Journey more, moſt of the Way aſcending gently upwards: And as to the River, it was by this Time quite loſt; but we might ſee, that on any Occaſion of Rain, or of the melting of the Snow on the Mountains, there was a Hollow in the Middle of the Valley, thro' which the Water made its Way, and on either hand the Sides of the Hills were full of the like Gullies, made by the Violence of the Rain, where, not the Earth only, but the Rocks themſelves, even the very Stone, ſeem'd to be worn and penetrated by the continual Fall of the Water.

Here my Patron ſhew'd me, that in the Hollow, which I mention'd, in the Middle of this Way, and at the Bottom of thoſe Gullies, or Places worn, as above, in the Rocks, there were often found Pieces of Gold, and ſometimes, after a Rain, very great Quantities; and that there were few of the little *Chilian* Cottages, which I had ſeen, where they had not ſometimes a Pound or Two of Gold Duſt, and Lumps of Gold by them; and he was miſtaken, if I was willing to tarry, and make

the Experiment, if we did not find ſome, even then, in a very little Search.

The *Chilian* Mountainier, at whoſe Houſe we had ſtopp'd, to dine, had gone with us, and he hearing my Patron ſay thus, runs preſently to the hollow Channel in the Middle; there was a Kind of a Fall, or Break in it, where the Water by falling, perhaps, Two or Three Foot, had made a little Place deeper than the reſt; and which, tho' there was no Water then running, yet had Water in it, perhaps the Quantity of a Barrel or Two: Here, with the Help of Two of the Servants, and a Kind of Scoop, he preſently threw out the Water, with the Sand, and whatever was at Bottom among it, into the ordinary Water-Courſe; the Water falling thus hard, every Scoop-full upon the Sand or Earth that came out of the Scoop before it, waſh'd a great deal of it away; and among that which remain'd, we might plainly ſee little Lumps of Gold ſhining as big as Grains of Sand, and ſometimes One or Two a little bigger.

This was Demonſtration enough to us; I took up ſome ſmall Grains of it, about the Quantity of Half a Quarter of an Ounce, and left my Midſhip-Men to take up more, and they ſtaid indeed ſo long, that they could ſcarce ſee their Way to overtake us, and brought away about Two Ounces in all, the *Chilian* and the Servants very freely giving them all they found.

When we had travell'd about Nine Miles more in this winding frightful narrow Way, it began to grow towards Night, and

my

my Patron talk'd of taking up our Quarters as we had before; but his Gentleman put him in Mind of a *Chilian*, one of their Old Servants, who lived in a Turning among the Mountains, about Half a Mile out of our Way, and where we might be accommodated again with the Helps of a Houſe, and Place, at leaſt, for our Cookery: Very true, ſays our Patron, We will go thither, and there, Seignior, ſays he, turning to me, You ſhall ſee an Emblem of complete Felicity, even in the Middle of this Place of Horror; and you ſhall ſee a Prince greater, and more truly ſo, than King *Philip*, who is the greateſt Man in the World.

Accordingly we went ſoftly on, his Gentleman having advanced before, and, in about Half a Mile, we found a Turning or Opening on our Left, where we beheld a deep, large Valley, almoſt Circular, and of about a Mile Diameter, and abundance of Houſes, or Cottages, interſpers'd all over it, ſo that the whole Valley looked like an inhabited Village, and the Ground, like a planted Garden.

We, who, as I ſaid, had been for ſome Miles aſcending upwards, were ſo high above them, that the low Valley looked, as the Low Lands in *England* look below *Box-Hill*, in *Surrey*; and I began to aſk, How we ſhould get down? But as we were come into a wider Space than before, ſo we had more Day-light; for though the Hollow Way had rendred it near duſk before, now it was almoſt clear Day again.

Here

Here we parted with the First *Chilian* that I mentioned, and I ordered one of my Midſhipmen to give him a Hat, and a Piece of Black Bays, enough to make him a Cloak, which ſo obliged the Man, that he knew not what way to teſtify his Joy: But I knew what I was doing in this; and I ordered my Midſhip-man to do it, that he might make his Acquaintance with him againſt another Time, and it was not a Gift ill-beſtowed, as will appear in its Place.

We were now obliged to quit our Mules, who all took up their Quarters at the Top of the Hill, while we, by Footings made in the Rocks, deſcended, as we might ſay, down a Pair of Stairs of Half a Mile long, but with many plain Places between, like Foot-paces, for the Eaſe of going and coming.

Thus winding and turning, to avoid the Declivity of the Hill, we came very ſafe to the Bottom, where my Patron's Gentleman, and our New Landlord, *that was to be*, came to pay his Compliment to us.

He was dreſſed in a Jerkin made of an Otter Skin, like a Doublet, a Pair of long *Spaniſh* Breeches of Leather, dreſs'd after the *Spaniſh* Faſhion, Green, and very ſoft, and which looked very well, but what the Skin was, I could not gueſs; he had over it a Mantle, of a kind of Cotton, dyed in Two or Three grave Brown Colours, and thrown about him like a *Scotſman*'s Plaid; he had Shoes of a particular Make, tied on like Sandals, flat-heeled, no Stockings, his Breeches hanging down below the Calf of his

Leg,

Leg; and his Shoes lacing up above his Ancles; he had on a Cap of the Skin of ſome ſmall Beaſt like a *Rocoon*, with a bit of the Tail hanging out from the Crown of his Head backward, a long Pole in his Hand; and a Servant, as oddly dreſs'd as himſelf, carried his Gun; he had neither Spado nor Dagger.

When our Patron came up, the *Chilian* ſtepped forward, and made him Three very low Bows, and then they talked together, not in *Spaniſh*, but in a kind of *Mountain Jargon*, ſome *Spaniſh*, and ſome *Chilian*, of which I ſcarce underſtood one Word: After a few Words, I underſtood he ſaid ſomething of a Stranger come to ſee, *and then, I ſuppoſe, added*, the Paſſages of the Mountains; then the *Chilian* came towards me, made me Three Bows, and bad me welcome in *Spaniſh*: As ſoon as he had ſaid that, he turns to his *Barbarian, I mean, His Servant, for he was as ugly a look'd Fellow as ever I ſaw*, and taking his Gun from him, preſented it to me, my Patron bad me take it, *for he ſaw me a little at a Loſs what to do*, telling me, That as it was the greateſt Compliment that a *Chilian* could pay to me, he would be very ill pleaſed, and out of Humour, if it was not accepted, and would think we did not care to be friendly with him.

As we had given this *Chilian* no Notice of our coming, no, not a Quarter of an Hour, we could not expect great Matters of Entertainment, and, as we carried our Proviſion with

us, we did not ſtand in much need of it; but we had no Reaſon to complain.

This Man's Habitation was all the ſame as the reſt; low, and covered with a Sedge, or a kind of Reed, which we found grew very plentifully in the Valley where he liv'd; he had ſeveral Pieces of Ground round his Dwelling, incloſed with Stone Walls, made very artificially with ſmall Stones, and no Mortar; theſe incloſed Grounds were planted with ſeveral kinds of Garden-ſtuff for his Houſehold, ſuch as Plantains, *Spaniſh* Cabages, Green Cocoa, and other Things of the Growth of their own Country, and Two of them with *European* Wheat.

He had Five or Six Apartments in his Houſe, every one of them had a Door into the Air, and into one another, and Two of them were very large and decent, had long Tables on one Side made after their own Way, and Benches to ſit to them like our Country Peoples long Tables in *England*, and Mattreſſes like Couches all along the other Side, with Skins of ſeveral Sorts of wild Creatures laid on them to repoſe on in the Heat of the Day, as is the Uſage among the *Spaniards*.

Our People ſet up their Tents and Beds abroad as before; but my Patron told me, The *Chilian* would take it very ill, if he and I did not take up our Lodging in his Houſe, and we had Two Rooms provided, very magnificent in their Way. The Mattreſs we lay on, had a large Canopy over it, ſpread like the Crown of a Tent, and covered with a large Piece of Cotton, white as Milk, and which

came

came round every way like a Curtain; ſo that, if it had been in the Open Field, it would have been a complete Covering; the Bed, ſuch as it was, might be as hard as a Quilt, and not more, and the Covering was of the ſame Cotton as the Curtain-work, which, it ſeems, is the Manufacture of the *Chilian* Women, and is made very dextrouſly; it looked wild, but was pleaſant enough, and proper to the Place; ſo I ſlept very comfortably in it.

But, I muſt confeſs, I was ſurprized at the Aſpect of Things in the Night here. It was, as I told you above, near Night when we came to this Man's Cottage (Palace I ſhould have called it) and while we were taking our Repaſt, which was very pretty, it grew quite Night; we had Wax Candles brought in for Light, which, it ſeems, my Patron's Man had provided; and the Place had ſo little Communication with the Air by Windows, that we ſaw nothing of what was without Doors.

After Supper, my Patron turns to me, Come, Seignior, ſaid he, pray prepare yourſelf to take a Walk: What, in the Dark, ſaid I, in ſuch a Country as this? No, no, ſays he, It is never dark here, you are now come to the Country of Everlaſting Day; What think you? Is not this *Eliſium?* I do not underſtand you, ſays I; But you will preſently, ſays he, when I ſhall ſhew you, that 'tis now lighter Abroad, than when we came in. Soon after this, ſome of the Servants opened the Door that went into the next

Room, and the Door of that Room, which opened into the Air, ſtood open, from whence a Light of Fire ſhone into the outer Room, and ſo farther into ours: What are they burning there, ſays I to my Patron? You will ſee preſently, ſays he; adding, I hope you will not be ſurprized; ſo he led me out to that Door.

But who can expreſs the Thoughts of a Man's Heart, coming on a ſudden into a Place where the whole World ſeemed to be of a light Fire, the Valley was on one Side ſo exceeding bright, the Eye could ſcarce bear to look at it; the Sides of the Mountains were ſhining like the Fire itſelf; the Flame from the Top of the Mountain on the other Side, caſting its Light directly upon them, from thence the Reflection into other Parts look'd Red, and more terrible; for the firſt was white and clear, like the Light of the Sun; but the other being, as it were, a Reflection of Light mix'd with ſome darker Cavities, repreſented the Fire of a Furnace; and, in ſhort, it might well be ſaid, here was no Darkneſs; But, certainly, at the firſt View it gives no Traveller any other Idea than that of being at the very Entrance into Eternal Horror.

All this while there was no Fire, that is to ſay, No real Flame to be ſeen, only, that where the Flame was, it ſhone clearly into the Valley; but the *Volcano*, or *Volcanos*, from whence the Fire iſſued out (for it ſeems there were no leſs than Three of them, tho' at the Diſtance of ſome Miles from one another) were on the *South* and *Eaſt* Sides of the

Valley,

Valley, which was ſo much on that Side where we were, that we could ſee nothing but the Light, neither on the other Side, could they ſee any more, it ſeems, than juſt the Top of the Flame; not knowing any thing of the Places from whence it iſſued out, which no mortal Creature, no, not of the *Chilians* themſelves, were ever hardy enough to go near; nor would it be poſſible if any ſhould attempt it, the Tops of the Hills, for many Leagues about them, being covered with new Mountains of Aſhes and Stones, which are daily caſt out of the Mouths of thoſe *Volcanos*, by which, they grew every Day higher than they were before, and which would overwhelm not only Men, but whole Armies of Men, if they ſhould venture to come near them.

When firſt we came into the long narrow Way I mentioned laſt, I obſerved, That, as I thought, the Wind blew very hard aloft among the Hills, and that it made a Noiſe like Thunder, which I thought nothing of, but as a Thing uſual; But now, when I came to this terrible Sight, and that I heard the ſame Thunder, and yet found the Air calm and quiet, I ſoon underſtood, that it was a continued Thunder, occaſioned by the Roaring of the Fire in the Bowels of the Mountains.

It was ſome Time, you may ſuppoſe, before a Traveller, unacquainted with ſuch Things, could make them familiar to him; and though the Horror and Surprize might abate, after proper Reflections on the Nature

and Reaſon of the Thing, yet I had a kind of Aſtoniſhment upon me for a great while; every different Place to which I turned my Eye, preſented me with a new Scene of Horror; I was, for a while, frighted at the Fire being, as it were, over my Head, for I could ſee nothing of it; but that the Air looked as if it were all on Fire, and I could not perſuade myſelf but it would caſt down the Rocks and Mountains on my Head; But they laugh'd me out of that Part.

After a while, I aſked them, If theſe *Volcanos* did not caſt out a kind of Liquid Fire, as I had ſeen an Account of on the monſtrous Eruptions at Mount *Ætna*, which caſt out a prodigious Stream of Fire, and ran Eight Leagues into the Sea? Upon my putting this Queſtion to my Patron, he aſked the *Chilian*, How long ago it was ſince *ſuch a Stream*, calling it by a Name of their own, ran Fire? He anſwered, It ran now, and if we were diſpoſed to walk but Three Furlongs, we ſhould ſee it.

He ſaid little to me, but aſked me, If I car'd to walk a little way by this kind of Light? I told him, It was a ſurprizing Place we were in, but I ſuppoſed he would lead me into no Danger; he ſaid, He would aſſure me he would lead me into no Danger; That theſe Things were very familiar to them; but that I might depend there was no Hazard, and that the Flames which gave all this Light, were Six or Seven Miles off, and ſome of them more: We walked along the Plain of the Valley about Half a Mile, when another great

great Valley opened to the Right, and gave us a more dreadful Profpect than any we had feen before; for at the farther End of this Second Valley, but at the Diftance of about Three Miles from where we ftood, we faw a livid Stream of Fire come running down the Sides of the Mountain for near Three Quarters of a Mile in Length, running like melted Metal into a Mould, or out of a Furnace, 'till, I fuppofed, as it came nearer the Bottom, it cooled and feparated, and fo went out of itfelf.

Beyond this, over the Summit of a prodigious Mountain, we could fee the Tops of the clear Flame of a *Volcano*, a dreadful one no doubt, could we have feen it all; and from the Mouth of which, it was fuppofed this Stream of Fire came, though the *Chilian* affured us, that the Fire itfelf was Eight Leagues off, and that the Liquid Fire which we faw, came out of the Side of the Mountain, and was Two Leagues off of the great *Volcano* itfelf, running like Metal out of a Furnace.

They told me, There was a great deal of melted Gold ran down with the other inflamed Earth in that Stream, and that much Gold was afterwards found there; but this I was to take upon Truft.

This Sight was, as you will eafily fuppofe, beft at a Diftance, and, indeed, I had enough of it; as for my Two Midfhip-men, they were almoft frighted out of all their Refolutions of going any farther in this horrible Place, and when we came back, they came

mighty ſeriouſly to me, and begg'd of me, for God's ſake, not to venture any farther upon the Faith of theſe *Spaniards*, for that they would certainly carry us all into ſome Miſchief or other, and betray us.

I bid them be eaſy, for I ſaw nothing in it all, that look'd like Treachery; That it was true, indeed, it was a terrible Place to look on, but it ſeemed to be nothing but what was natural and familiar there, and we ſhould be ſoon out of it. They told me very ſeriouſly, That they believed it was the very Mouth of Hell, and that, in ſhort, they were not able to bear it, and begged of me to go back: I told them No, I could not think of going back; but if they could not endure it, I would give Conſent that they ſhould go back in the Morning: However, we went, for the preſent, to the *Chilian*'s Houſe again, where we got a plentiful Draught of *Chilian* Wine, for my Patron had taken care to have a good Quantity of it with us, and in the Morning my Two Midſhip-men, who got very drunk over Night, had Courage enough to venture forward again; for the Light of the Sun put quite another Face upon Things, and nothing of the Fire was then to be ſeen, only the Smoke.

All our Company lodged in the Tents here, but I and my Patron the *Spaniard*, who lodged within the *Chilian*'s Houſe, as I told you: This *Chilian* was a great Man among the Natives, and all the Valley I ſpoke of, which lay round his Dwelling, was called his own; he lived in a State of perfect Tranquility, neither

neither enjoying nor coveting any thing but what was neceſſary, and wanting nothing that was ſo; he had Gold, as it might be ſaid, for picking it up off of the Dunghil, for it was found in all the little Gullies and Rills of Water, which, as I have ſaid, come down from the Mountains on every Side; yet I did not find, that he troubled himſelf to lay up any great Quantity more than ſerv'd to go to *Villa Rica*, and buy what he wanted for himſelf and Family; he had, it ſeems, a Wife, and ſome Daughters, but no Sons; theſe lived in a ſeparate Houſe, about a Furlong from this where he lived, and were kept there as a Family by themſelves, and if he had had any Sons, they would have lived with him.

He did not offer to go with us any part of our Way, as the other had done; but, having entertained us with great Civility, took his Leave. I cauſed one of my Midſhip-men to make him a Preſent, when we came away, of a Piece of Black Bays, enough to make him a Cloak, as I did the other, and a Piece of Blue *Engliſh* Serge, enough to make him a Jerkin and Breeches, which he accepted as a great Bounty.

We ſet out again, though not very early in the Morning, having, as I ſaid, ſat up late, and drank freely, over Night, and we found, that after we had been gone to ſleep, it had rained very hard, and though the Rain was over before we went out, yet the falling of the Water from the Hills, made ſuch a confuſed Noiſe, and was eccho'd ſo backward

and forward from all Sides, that it was like a ſtrange Mixture of diſtant Thunder, and though we knew the Cauſes, yet it could not but be ſurprizing to us for a while.

However, we ſet forward, the Way under Foot being pretty good; and firſt we went up the Steps again, by which we had come down (our laſt Hoſt waiting on us thither) and there I gave him back his Gun, for he would not take it before.

In this Valley, which was the pleaſanteſt by Day, and the moſt diſmal by Night, that ever I ſaw, I obſerved abundance of Goats, as well tame in the Incloſures, as wild upon the Rocks; and we found afterwards, that the laſt were perfectly wild, and to be had, like thoſe at *Juan Fernandes*, by any body that could catch them; my Patron ſent off Two of his Men, juſt as a Huntſman caſts off his Hounds, to go and catch Goats, and they brought us in Three, which they ſhot in leſs than Half an Hour, and theſe we carried with us for our Evening Supply, for we made no Dinner this Day, having fed heartily in the Morning about Nine, and had Chocolate Two Hours before that.

We travelled now along the narrow, winding Paſſage, which I mentioned before, for about Four Hours, 'till I found, that though we had aſcended but gently, yet, that, as we had done ſo for almoſt Twenty Miles together, we were got up to a frightful Height, and I began to expect ſome very difficult Deſcent on the other Side; But we were made eaſy about Two a Clock, when the Way not only declined

declined again to the *Eaſt*, but grew wider, though with frequent Turnings and Winding about, ſo that we could ſeldom ſee above Half a Mile before us: We went on thus pretty much upon a Level, now riſing, now falling; but ſtill I found that we were a very great Height from our firſt Entrance, and as to the running of the Water, I found that it flow'd neither *Eaſt* nor *Weſt*, but run all down the little Turnings that we frequently met with on the *North* Side of our Way, which, my Patron told me, went all into the great Valley where we ſaw the Fire, and ſo went away by a general Channel *North Weſt* 'till it found its Way out into the open Country of *Chili*, and ſo to the *South-Seas*.

We were now come to another Night's Lodging, which we were obliged to take up with on the green Graſs, as we did the Firſt Night; but by the Help of our Proveditor-General, my Patron, we fared very well, our Goats-Fleſh being reduced into ſo many Sorts of Veniſon, that none of us could diſtinguiſh it from the beſt Veniſon we ever taſted.

Here we ſlept without any of the frightful Things we ſaw the Night before, except, that we might ſee the Light of the Fire in the Air, at a great Diſtance, like a great City on Fire, but that gave us no Diſturbance at all.

In the Morning our Two Hunters ſhot a Deer, or rather a young Fawn, before we were awake, and this was the firſt we met with in this Part of our Travel, and thus we were provided for Dinner even before

Breakfaſt-

Breakfaſt-time; as for our Breakfaſt, it was always a *Spaniſh* Breakfaſt, that is to ſay, About a Pint of Chocolate.

We ſet out very merrily in the Morning, and we that were *Engliſhmen*, could not refrain ſmiling at one another, to think how we paſs'd through a Country where the Gold lay in every Ditch, as we might call it, and never troubled ourſelves ſo much as to ſtoop to take it up; ſo certain is it, that 'tis eaſy to be placed in a Station of Life, where that very Gold (the heaping up of which, is here made the main Buſineſs of Man's living in the World) would be of no Value, and not worth taking off from the Ground; nay, not of Signification enough to make a Preſent of, for that was the Caſe here. Two or Three Yards of *Colcheſter* Bays, a coarſe Rug-like Manufacture, worth in *London*, about Fifteen-Pence Half-penny *per* Yard, was here a Preſent for a Man of Quality, when for a Handful of Gold-Duſt, the ſame Perſon would ſcarce ſay, Thank-you; or, perhaps, would think himſelf not kindly treated to have it offered him.

We travelled this Day pretty ſmartly, having reſted at Noon about Two Hours, as before, and, by my Calculation, went about Twenty-two *Engliſh* Miles in all; about Five a Clock in the Afternoon, we came into a broad, plain, open Place, where, though it was not properly a Valley, yet we found it lay very level for a good way together. Our Way lying almoſt *E. S. E.* after we had marched ſo about Two Miles, I found the Way

go

go evidently down Hill, and in Half a Mile more, to our ſingular Satisfaction, we found the Water from the Mountains ran plainly *Eaſtward*, and, conſequently, to the *North Sea.*

We ſaw, at a Diſtance, ſeveral Huts, or Houſes of the *Mountanier* Inhabitants, but we came near none of them, but kept on our Way, going down Two or Three pretty ſteep Places, not at all dangerous, though ſomething difficult.

We encamped again the next Night, as before, and ſtill our good Caterer had Plenty of Food for us; But I obſerved, That the next Morning, when we ſet forward, our Tents were left ſtanding, the Baggage-Mules tied together to graze, and our Company leſſened by all my Patrons Servants, which, when I enquired about, he told me, He hoped we ſhould have good Quarters quickly without them. I did not underſtand him for the preſent, but it unriddled itſelf ſoon after; for though we travelled Four Days more in that Narrow Way, yet he always found us Lodging at the Cottages of the Mountaniers. The Sixth Day we went all Day up Hill; at laſt, on a ſudden, the Way turn'd ſhort *Eaſt*, and opened into a vaſt wide Country, boundleſs to the Eye every way, and delivered us intirely from the Mountains of the *Andes*, in which we had wandred ſo long.

Any one may gueſs what an agreeable Surprize this was to us, to whom it was the main End of our Travels. We made no Queſtion that this was the open Country extended to the

the *North*, or *Atlantick* Ocean, but how far it was thither, or what Inhabitants it was possessed by, what Travelling, what Provisions to be found by the Way, what Rivers to pass, and whether any navigable or not; this our Patron himself could not tell us one Word of; owning frankly to us, That he had never been one Step farther than the Place where we then stood; and that he had been there only once to satisfy his Curiosity, as I did now.

I told him, That if I had lived where he did, and had had Servants and Provisions at Command, as he had, it would have been impossible for me to have restrained my Curiosity so far, as not to have search'd through that whole Country to the Sea-Side long ago: I told him, It seemed to be a pleasant and fruitful Soil, and, no doubt, was capable of Cultivations and Improvements; and if it had been only to have possessed such a Country in his *Catholick* Majesty's Name, it must have been worth while to undertake the Discovery for the Honour of *Spain*; and that there could be no Room to question, but his *Catholick* Majesty would have honoured him that should have undertaken such a Thing, with some particular Mark of his Favour, which might be of Consequence to him and his Family.

He told me, That as to that, the *Spaniards* seemed already to have more Dominions in *America*, than they could keep, and much more than they were able to reap the Benefit of, and still more infinitely than they could improve,

improve, and eſpecially in thoſe Parts called *South America.*

That it was next to miraculous, that they could keep the Poſſeſſion where they were, and were not the *Natives* ſo utterly deſtitute of Support from any other Part of the World, as not to be able to have either Arms or Ammunition put into their Hands, it would be impoſſible, ſince, I might eaſily ſee, they were Men that wanted not Strength of Body, or Courage; and it was evident, they did not want Numbers, ſeeing they were already Ten thouſand *Natives* to one *Spaniard*, taking the whole Country from one End to the other.

He went on, Then you ſee, Seignior, ſays he, how far we are from Improvement in that Part of the Country which we poſſeſs, and many more which, you may be ſure, are among theſe vaſt Mountains, and which we never diſcovered, ſeeing all theſe Valleys and Paſſages among the Mountains, where Gold is to be had in ſuch Quantities, and with ſo much Eaſe, that every poor *Chilian* gathers it up with his Hands, and may have as much as he pleaſes, are all left open, naked, and unregarded, in the Poſſeſſion of the wild Mountaniers, who are Heathens and Savages; and the *Spaniards* you ſee, ſays he, are ſo few, and theſe few ſo indolent, ſo ſlothful, and ſo ſatisfied with the Gold they get of the *Chilians* for Things of ſmall Value in Trade, that all this vaſt Treaſure lies unregarded by them. Nay, adds he, Is it not very odd to obſerve, That when for our Diverſion we come out into the Hills,

and among theſe Places where you ſee the Gold is ſo eaſily found, we come, as we call it, a Hunting, and divert ourſelves more with ſhooting wild Parrots, or a Fawn or two, for which alſo, we ride, and run, and make our Servants weary themſelves more than they would in fiſhing up the Gold among the Gullies and Holes that the Water makes in the Rocks, and more than would ſuffice to find Fifty, nay, One hundred times the Value in Gold?

To what Purpoſe then ſhould we ſeek the Poſſeſſion of more Countries, who are already poſſeſs'd of more Land than we can improve, and of more Wealth than we know what to do with? Perceiving me very attentive, he went on thus.

Were theſe Mountains, *ſaid he*, valued in *Europe*, according to the Riches to be found in them, the Viceroy would obtain Orders from the King, to have ſtrong Forts erected at the Entrance in, and at the Coming out of them, as well on the Side of *Chili*, as here; and ſtrong Garriſons maintained in them, to prevent foreign Nations landing, either on our Side in *Chili*, or on this Side in the *North* Seas, and taking the Poſſeſſion from us; he would then order Thirty thouſand Slaves, Negroes, or *Chilians*, to be conſtantly employed, not only in picking up what Gold might be found in the Channels of the Water, which might eaſily be formed into proper Receivers, ſo as that if any Gold waſhed from the Rocks, it ſhould ſoon be found, and be ſo ſecured, as that none of it would eſcape;

alſo

alſo others, with Miners and Engineers, might ſearch into the very Rocks themſelves, and would, no doubt, find out ſuch Mines of Gold, or other ſecret Stores of it in thoſe Mountains, as would be ſufficient to inrich the World.

While we omit ſuch Things as theſe, Seignior, *ſays he*, what ſignifies *Spain* making new Acquiſitions, or the People of *Spain* ſeeking new Countries? This vaſt Tract of Land you ſee here, and ſome Hundreds of Miles every Way, which your Eye cannot reach to, is a fruitful, pleaſant, and agreeable Piece of God's Creation; but perfectly uncultivated, and moſt of it uninhabited; and any Nation in *Europe*, that thinks fit to ſettle in it, are free to do ſo, for any thing we are able to do to prevent them.

But, Seignior, ſaid I, does not his *Catholick* Majeſty claim a Title to the Poſſeſſion of it? And have the *Spaniards* no Governor over it? nor any Ports or Towns, Settlements or Colonies in it, as is the Caſe here in *Chili?* Seignior, replies he, The King of *Spain* is Lord of all *America*; as well that which he poſſeſſes, as that which he poſſeſſes not; that Right being given him by the Pope, in the Right of his being a Chriſtian Prince, making new Diſcoveries for propagating the Chriſtian Faith among Infidels: How far that may paſs for a Title among the *European* Powers, I know not. I have heard, that it has always paſſed for a Maxim in *Europe*, that no Country, which is not planted by any Prince or People, can be ſaid to belong

to them; and, indeed, I cannot ſay, but it ſeems to be rational, that no Prince ſhould pretend to any Title to a Country where he does not think fit to Plant, and to keep Poſſeſſion; for if he leaves the Country unpoſſeſſed, he leaves it free for any other Nation to come and poſſeſs; and this is the Reaſon why the former King of *Spain* did not diſpute that Right of the *French*, to their Colonies of *Miſſiſſipi* and *Canada*; or the Right of the *Engliſh* to the *Carribee* Iſlands, or to their Colonies of *Virginia* and *New-England.*

In like manner from the *Buenos Ayres*, in the *Rio de la Plata*, which lies that Way, ſays he (pointing *N. E.*) to the *Fretum Magellanicum*, which lies that Way (pointing *S. E.*) which comprehends a vaſt Number of Leagues, is called by us, *Coaſta Deſerta*, being unpoſſeſſed by *Spain*, and diſregarded of all our Nation: Neither is there one *Spaniard* in it; nevertheleſs, you ſee how fruitful, how pleaſant, and how agreeable a Climate it is; how apt for Planting and Peopling it ſeems to be; and, above all, what a Place of Wealth here would be behind them, ſufficient, and more than enough, both for them and us; for we ſhould have no Reaſon to offer them any Diſturbance; neither ſhould we be in any Condition to do it, the Paſſages of the Mountains being but few and difficult, as you have ſeen, and our Numbers not ſufficient to do any thing more than to block them up, to keep ſuch People from breaking in upon our Settlements on the Coaſt of the *South-Seas*.

I aſked him, If theſe Notions of his were common among thoſe of his Country, who were ſettled in *Chili* and *Peru?* Or, Whether they were his own Private Opinions only? I told him, I believed, the latter, becauſe I found he acted in all his Affairs upon generous Principles, and was for propagating the Good of Mankind; but that I queſtioned whether their Governor of *Old-Spain*, or the Sub-Governor, and Viceroy of *New-Spain*, acted upon thoſe Notions or no; and ſince he had mentioned the *Buenos Ayres*, and the *Rio de la Plata*, I ſhould take that as an Example, ſeeing the *Spaniards* would never ſuffer any Nation to ſet Foot in that great River, where ſo many Countries might have been diſcovered, and Colonies planted; though at the ſame Time, they had not poſſeſſed, or fully diſcovered thoſe Places themſelves.

He anſwered me, ſmiling, Seignior, ſays he, You have given the Reaſon for this yourſelf in that very Part which you think is a Reaſon againſt it. We have a Colony at *Buenos Ayres*, and at the City of *Aſcenſion*, higher up in the *Rio de la Plata*; and we are not willing to let any other Nation ſettle there, becauſe we would not let them ſee how weak we are, and what a vaſt Extent of Land we poſſeſs there with a few Men: And this for Two Reaſons.

Firſt, We are poſſeſſed of the Country, and daily increaſing there, and may, in Time, extend ourſelves farther. The great Rivers *Parana*, and *Paraguay*, being yet left for us to plant in, and we are not willing to put

ourſelves out of a Capacity of planting farther, and therefore we keep the Poſſeſſion.

Secondly, We have a Communication from thence with *Peru.* That great River *La Plata* riſes at the City *La Plata*, and out of the Mountain *Potoſi* in *Peru*, and a great Trade is carried on by that River; and it would be dangerous to let Foreigners into the Secret of that Trade, which they might intirely cut off; eſpecially when they ſhould find that ſmall Number of *Spaniards* which are planted there to preſerve it, ſeeing there are not Six hundred *Spaniards* in all that vaſt Country, which, by the Courſe of that River, is more than One thouſand Six hundred Miles in Length.

I confeſs, ſaid I, theſe are juſt Grounds for your keeping the Poſſeſſion of that River. They are ſo, ſaid he, and the more, becauſe of ſo powerful a Colony as the *Portugueſe* have in the *Braſils*, which bound immediately upon it, and who are always incroaching upon it from the Land Side, and would gladly have a Paſſage up the *Rio Parana* to the Back of their Colony.

But here, Seignior, ſays he, the Caſe differs; For we neither take nor keep Poſſeſſion here; neither have we one *Spaniard*, as I ſaid, in the whole Country now before you; and therefore we call this Country *Coaſta Deſerta*; not that it is a Deſart, as that Name is generally taken to ſignify a barren, ſandy, dry Country; on the contrary, The infinite, prodigious Encreaſe of the *European* black Cattle, which were brought by the *Spaniards* to the

Buenos

Buenos Ayres, and let run loose, is a sufficient Testimony of the Fruitfulness and Richness of the Soil, their Number being such, that they kill above Twenty thousand of them in a Year, for nothing but the Hides, which they carry away to *Spain*, leaving the Flesh, though fat and wholesome, to perish on the Ground, or be devoured by Birds of Prey.

And the Number is so great, notwithstanding all they destroy, that they are found to wander sometimes in Droves of many Thousands together, over all the vast Country between the *Rio de la Plata*, the City of *Ascension*, and the *Frontier* of *Peru*, and even down into this Country which you see before us, and up to to the very Foot of these Mountains.

Well, said I, and is it not a great Pity, that all this Part of the Country, and in such a Climate as this is, should lie uncultivated, or uninhabited rather? for I understand there are not any great Numbers of People to be found among them.

It is true, added he, there are some Notions of People spread about in this Country; but as the Terror of our People, the *Spaniards*, drove them, at first, from the Sea Coast towards these Mountains, so the greatest Part of them continue on this Side still; for towards the Coast it is very rare that they find any People.

I would have enquired of him about Rivers, and Navigable Streams, which might be in this Country; but he told me frankly, That he could give me no Account of that; only

thus, That if any of the Rivers went away towards the *North*, they certainly run all into the great *Rio de la Plata*; but that if they went *Eaſt*, or *Southerly*, they muſt go directly to the Coaſt, which was ordinarily called, as he ſaid, *La Coaſta Deſerta*, or, as by ſome, *The Coaſt of* Palagonia; That as to the Magnitude of thoſe Rivers, he could ſay little, but that it could not be rational, but there muſt be ſome very conſiderable Rivers, and whoſe Streams muſt needs be capable of Navigation, ſeeing abundance of Water muſt continually flow from the Mountains where we then were; and its being, at leaſt, Four hundred Miles from the Sea Side, thoſe ſmall Streams muſt neceſſarily joyn together, and make large Rivers in the plain Country.

I had enough in this Diſcourſe, fully to ſatisfy all my Curioſity, and ſufficiently to heighten my Deſire of making the farther Diſcoveries which I had in my Thoughts.

We pitch'd our little Camp here, and ſet down to our Repaſt; for I found, that tho' we were to go back to lodge, yet my Patron had taken care we ſhould be furniſhed ſufficiently for Dinner, and have a good Houſe to eat it in; that is to ſay, a Tent, as before.

The Place where we ſtood, though we had come down Hill for a great way, yet ſeemed very high from the ordinary Surface of the Country, and gave us, therefore, an exceeding fine Proſpect of it, the Country declining gradually for near Ten Miles; and we thought, as well as the Diſtance of the Place would

would allow us, we ſaw a great River, but, as I learned afterwards, it was rather a great Lake, than a River, which was ſupplied by the ſmaller Rivers, or Rivulets, from the Mountains, which met there as in a great Receptacle of Waters, and out of this Lake, they all iſſued again in one River; of which I ſhall have Occaſion to give a farther Account hereafter.

While we were at Dinner, I ordered my Midſhip-men to take their Obſervations of every diſtant Object, and to look at every thing with their Glaſſes; which they did, and told me of this Lake; but my Patron could give no Account of it, having never been, as he ſaid before, one Step farther that Way, than where we were. However, my Men ſhewed me plainly, that it was a great Lake, and that there went a large River from it towards the *E. S. E.* and this was enough for me, for that Way lay all the Schemes I had laid.

I took this Opportunity to aſk my Midſhip-men firſt, If they had taken ſuch Obſervations in their Paſſage of the Mountains, as that they were ſure they could find their Way through to this Place again without Guides? They aſſured me they could.

Then I put it to them, Whether they thought it might not be feazible to travel over that vaſt level Country to the *North Seas?* And to make a ſufficient Diſcovery of the Country, ſo as that hereafter *Engliſhmen* coming to the Coaſt on that Side of the *North Seas*, might penetrate to theſe Golden-

Mountains, and reap the Benefit of the Treaſure without going a prodigious Length about *Cape Horn*, and the *Terra del Fuego*, which was always attended with innumerable Dangers; and without breaking through the Kingdom of *Chili*, and the *Spaniards* Settlements, which, perhaps, we might ſoon be at Peace with, and ſo be ſhut out that way by our own Conſents?

One of my Men began to ſpeak of the Difficulties of ſuch an Attempt; The Want of Proviſions, and other Dangers which we ſhould be expoſed to on the Way; but the other, a bold, briſk Fellow, told me, He made no Queſtion, but it might be eaſily done, and eſpecially becauſe all the Rivers they ſhould meet with would, of courſe, run along with us, ſo that we ſhould be ſure to have the Tide with us, *as he called it*; And at laſt he added, That he would be content to be one of thoſe Men who ſhould undertake it, provided he ſhould be aſſured, that the Ships would not go away, and pretend that they could not be found. I told him, We would talk farther about it; That I had ſuch a Thing in my Head, and I had a ſtrong Inclination to undertake it myſelf; but that I could not anſwer it to leave the Ships, which depended ſo much upon my Care of the Voyage.

After ſome Talk of the Reaſonableneſs of ſuch an Undertaking, and the Methods of performing it, my Second Midſhip-man began to come into it, and to think it was practicable enough, and added, That though he

uſed

ufed fome Cautions in his firft hearing Propofals, yet, if he undertook that Enterprize, I fhould find, that he would do as much of his Duty in it, as another Man; and fo he did at laft, as will appear in its Place.

We were, by this Time, preparing to be fatisfied with our Journey, and my Patron coming to me, and afking, If I was for returning? I told him, I could not fay how many Days it would be before I fhould fay, I had enough of that Profpect; but that I would return when he pleafed; only I had one Queftion to afk him, which was, Whether the Mountains were as full of Gold on this Side, as they were on the Side of *Chili?*

As to that, *Seignior*, fays he, the beft Way to be certain, is to make a Tryal, that you may be fure we do not fpeak without Book; fo he called his Gentleman, and another Servant that was with him, and defired me to call my Two Midfhip-men, and fpeaking fomething to his own Servants firft, in the Language of the Country, as I fuppofe, he turned to me, and faid, Come, let us fit down and repofe ourfelves, and let them go all together, and fee what they can do.

Accordingly they went away, and, as my Men told me afterwards, they fearch'd in the fmall Streams of Water, which they found running, and in fome larger Gullies or Channels, where they found little or no Water running; but where, upon hafty Rains, great Shoots of Water had been ufed to run, and where Water ftood ftill in the Holes and

Falls,

Falls, as I have deſcribed once before on the like Occaſion.

They had not been gone above an Hour, when I plainly heard my Two *Engliſhmen* Hollow, which I could eaſily diſtinguiſh from the Voices of any other Nation, and immediately I ran out of the Tent, Captain *Merlote* followed, and I then ſaw one of my Midſhip-men running towards us, ſo we went to meet him, and what with hollowing, and running, he could hardly ſpeak; but recovering his Breath, ſaid, He came to deſire me to come to them, if I would ſee a Sight which I never ſaw in my Life. I was eager enough to go, ſo I went with him, and left Captain *Merlote* to go back to the Tent to my Patron the *Spaniard*, and the *Spaniſh* Doctor, who had not ſo much Share in the Curioſity: He did ſo, and they followed fair and ſoftly.

When we came to the Place, we ſaw ſuch a Sight, indeed, as I never ſaw before; for there they were ſitting down round a little Puddle, or Hole, as I might call it, of Water, where, in the Time of Rain, the Water running haſtily from a Piece of the Rock, about Two Foot higher than the reſt, had made a Pit under it with the Fall like the Tail of a Mill, only much leſs.

Here they took up the Sand, or Gravel, with their Hands, and every Handful brought up with it ſuch a Quantity of Gold, as was ſurprizing; for there they ſat picking it out juſt as the Boys in *London*, that go with a Broom and a Hat, pick out old Iron, Nails,

Nails, and Pins out of the Channels, and it lay as thick.

I ſtood and looked at them a while, and, it muſt be confeſſed, it was a pleaſant Sight enough; But reflecting immediately, that there was no End of this, and that we were only upon the Enquiry, Come away, ſays I, laughing, to my Men, and do not ſtand picking up of Traſh there all Day: Do you know how far we have to our Lodging?

I can make no gueſs what Quantity might have been found here in Places, which had, for Hundreds of Years, waſhed Gold from the Hills, and, perhaps, never had a Man come to pick any of it up before; But I was ſoon ſatisfied that here was enough, even to make all the World ſay they had enough; and ſo I called off my People, and came away.

It ſeems, the Quantity of Gold which is thus waſhed down, is not ſmall, ſince my Men, enquiring afterwards among the *Chilians*, heard them talk of the great Lake of Water which I mentioned juſt now that we ſaw at a Diſtance, which they call *The Golden-Lake*, and where was, as they ſaid, prodigious Quantities of it; not that our Men ſuppoſed any Gold was there in Mines, or in the ordinary Soil, but that the Waters from the Hills, running with very rapid Currents at certain Times in the rainy Seaſons, and after the melting of the Snows, had carried the Gold ſo far as that Lake; and as it has been ſo, perhaps, from the Days of the General Deluge, no People ever applying themſelves to gather the leaſt Grain of it up again,

again, it might well be increaſed to ſuch a Quantity, as might intitle that Water to the Name of *The Golden-Lake*, and all the little Streams and Sluices of Water that run into it, deſerved the Name of *Golden-Rivers*, as much as that of *The Golden-Lake*.

But my Buſineſs was to know, If the Gold was here, not to trouble myſelf to pick it up: My Views lay another way, and my End was fully anſwered; ſo I came back to my Patron, and brought all my Men with me; You live in a Golden Country, *Seignior*, *ſays I*, my Men are ſtark mad to ſee ſo much Gold, and no-body to pick it up: Should the World know what Treaſure you have here, I would not anſwer for it, that they ſhould not flock hither in Armies, and drive you all away. They need not do that, Seignior, ſays he, for here is enough for them, and for us too.

We now packed up, and began our Return, but it was not without Regret that I turned my Back upon this pleaſant Country, the moſt agreeable Place, of its kind, that ever I was at in all my Life, or ever ſhall be in again: A Country rich, pleaſant, fruitful, wholeſome, and capable of every thing for the Life of Man, that the Heart could entertain a Wiſh for.

But my preſent Work was to return; ſo we mounted our Mules, and had, in the mean Time, the Pleaſure of contemplating what we had ſeen, and applying ourſelves to ſuch farther Meaſures as we had concerted among us. In about Four Hours we returned to our

Camp,

Camp, as I called it, and, by the way, we found, to our no little Pain, that though we had come down Hill eaſily, and inſenſibly to the Opening, for ſome Miles, yet we had a hard pull up Hill to go back again: However, we reached to our Tents in good Time, and made our Firſt Encampment with Pleaſure enough, for we were very weary with the Fatigue of a hard Day's Journey.

The next Day we reached our good *Chilian*'s Manſion Houſe, or Palace, for ſuch it might be called, conſidering the Place, and conſidering the Entertainment; for now he had ſome Time to provide for us, knowing we would come back again.

He met us with Three Mules, and Two Servants, about a Mile before we came to the Deſcent going down to his Houſe, of which I took Notice before, and this he did to guide us a Way round to his Houſe, without going down thoſe uneaſy Steps; ſo we came on our Mules to his Door, that is to ſay, On *his* Mules, for he would have my Patron the *Spaniard, to whom, I obſerved, he ſhewed an extraordinary Reſpect*, and Captain *Merlote*, and myſelf, mount his freſh Mules to carry us to his Houſe.

When we came thither, I obſerved he wanted the Aſſiſtance of my Patron's Servants for his Cookery; for though he had provided abundance of Food, he owned, he knew not how to prepare it to our Liking; ſo they aſſiſted him, and one of my Midſhipmen pretending to cook too, made them roaſt a Piece of Veniſon, and a Piece of a Kid, or young Goat,

Goat, admirable well, and putting no Garlick or Onions into the Sauce, but their own Juices, with a little Wine, it pleafed the *Spaniard* fo well, that my Man paffed for an extraordinary Cook, and had the Favour afked of him, to drefs fome more after the fame Manner, when we came back to the *Spaniard*'s Houfe.

We had here feveral Sorts of wild Fowl, which the *Chilian* had fhot while we were gone; but I knew none of them by any of the Kinds we have in *England*, except fome *Teal.* However, they were very good.

The Day was very agreeable and pleafant here; but the Night dreadful, as before, being all Fire and Flame again, and though we underftood both what it was, and where, yet I could not make it familiar to me, for my Life. The *Chilian* perfuaded us to ftay all the next Day, and did his Endeavour to divert us as much as poffible: My Two Midfhip-men went out with him a Hunting, as he called it, that is, a Shooting; but, tho' he was a Man of Fifty Years of Age, he would have killed Ten of them at his Sport, running up the Hills, and leaping from Rock to Rock like a Boy of Seventeen. At his Gun he was fo fure a Markfman, that he feldom miffed any thing he fhot at, whether running, flying, or fitting.

They brought home with them feveral Fowls, Two Fawns, and full grown Deer, and we had nothing but boiling, ftewing, and broiling, all that Evening: In the Afternoon, we walked out to view the Hills, and

to

to ſee the ſtupendous Precipices which ſurrounded us. As for looking for Gold, we ſaw the Places where there was enough to be had; but that was become now ſo familiar to us, that we troubled not ourſelves about it, as a Thing not much worth while; but our Two Midſhip-men, I think, got about the Quantity of Five or Six Ounces a-piece while we were chatting, or repoſing in the *Chilian's* Houſe.

Here it was, that I entred into a Confidence with my Patron the *Spaniard*, concerning my Grand Deſign. I told him, in the firſt Place, That my View of the Open Country beyond theſe Hills, and the particular Account he had given me of it alſo, had raiſed a Curioſity in me, that I could ſcarce withſtand; and that I had thereupon form'd a Deſign, which, if he would further me with his Aſſiſtance, I had a very great Mind to put in Practice, and that, though I was to periſh in the Attempt.

He told me very readily, Nothing ſhould be wanting on his Part to give me any Aſſiſtance he could, either by himſelf, or any of his Servants; but, ſmiling, and with abundance of good Humour, *Seignior*, *ſays he*, I believe I gueſs at the Deſign you ſpeak of; you are fired now with a Deſire to traverſe this great Country to the *Coaſta Deſerta*, and the *North-Seas*; That is a very great Undertaking, and you will be well adviſed before you undertake it.

Truly,

Truly, Seignior, ſaid I, you have gueſſed my Deſign, and were it not, that I have Two Ships under my Care, and ſome Cargo of Value on Board, I would bring my whole Ship's Company on Shore, and make the Adventure, and, perhaps, we might be ſtrong enough to defend ourſelves againſt whatever might happen by the Way.

As to that, Seignior, ſays he, you would be in no Danger that would require ſo many Men; for you will find but few Inhabitants any where, and thoſe not in Numbers ſufficient to give you any Trouble; Fifty Men would be as many as you would either want or deſire, and, perhaps, as you would find Proviſions for; and, for Fifty Men, we might be able to carry Proviſions with us to keep them from Diſtreſs; but if you will accept of my Advice, as well as Aſſiſtance, Seignior, ſays he, chooſe a faithful ſtrong Fellow out of your Ship, on whom you can depend, and give him Fifty Men with him, or thereabouts, and ſuch Inſtructions as you may find needful, as to the Place on the Coaſt where you would have them fix their Stay, and let them take the firſt Hazards of the Adventure; and as you are going round by Sea, you will, if Succeſs follows, meet them on the Shore; and if the Account they give of their Journey encourage you, you may come afterwards yourſelf up to theſe very Mountains, and take a farther View: In which Caſe, he added, with a ſolemn Proteſtation, Coſt what it will, I will come and meet you One hundred Miles beyond the Hills,

Hills, with Supplies of Provifions, and Mules for your Affiftance.

This was fuch wholefome and friendly Advice, and he offer'd it fo fincerely, that tho' it was very little differing from my own Defign, yet I would not be feen fo to leffen his Prudence in the Meafures of his Friendfhip, in advifing it, as to fay, That I had refolv'd to do fo. But, making all poffible Acknowledgment to him for his kind Offers, I told him, I would take his Advice, and that I would act juft according to the Meafures he had prefcrib'd; and at the fame time, I affur'd him, That if I found a convenient Port to Settle and Fortify in, I would not fail to come again from *France (for we pafs'd always as acting from* France, *whatever Nation we were of)* to Relieve and Supply them; and that if ever I returned fafe, I would not fail to Correfpond with him, by the Paffages of the Mountains, and make a better Acknowledgment for his Kindnefs, than I had been able to do yet.

He was going to break off the Difcourfe, upon the Occafion of the *Chilian*'s returning, who was juft come in from his Hunting, telling me, We would talk farther of it by the Way; But I told him, I could not quite difmifs the Subject; becaufe I muft befpeak him to make fome mention of it to the *Chilian*, that he might, on his Account, be an Affiftant to our Men, as we faw he was capable of being, in their paffing by thofe difficult Ways, and for their Supply of Provifion, *&c.* *Trouble not your felf with that, Seignior*, faid

 he,

he, *for when your Men come, the Care ſhall be mine: I'll come myſelf as far as this Wealthy* Chilian'*s*, *and procure them all the Aſſiſtance this Place can afford them*, *and do any thing that offers*, *to forward them in the Undertaking.*

This was ſo Generous, and ſo Extraordinary, that I had nothing to ſay more, but to pleaſe myſelf with the apparent Succeſs of my Attempt, and acknowledge the Happineſs of having an Opportunity to oblige ſo generous a Spirited and grateful a Perſon.

I would, however, have made ſome farther Acknowledgment to our *Chilian* Benefactor; but I had nothing left, except a Couple of Hats, and Three Pair of *Engliſh* Stockings, One Pair Silk and the other Two Worſted, and thoſe I gave him, and made him a great many Acknowledgments for the Favours he had ſhewn us, and the next Morning came away.

We made little Stay any where elſe in our Return; but making much ſuch Stages back as we did forward, we came the Fourteenth Day to our Patron's Houſe, having made the Paſſage through in ſomething leſs than Sixteen Days, and the like back in Fifteen Days, including our ſtay at the *Chilian*'s one Day. The Length of the Way, according to the beſt of my Calculations, I reckon'd to be about One Hundred Seventy Five *Engliſh* Miles, taking it with all its Windings and Turnings, which were not a few; but which had this Conveniency with them, That they gave a more eaſy and agreeable Paſſage, and made the *Engliſh* Proverb abundantly

dantly good, namely, *That the fartheſt Way was the neareſt Way.*

The Civilities I received after this from my Generous *Spaniard*, were agreeable to the reſt of his Uſage of me; but we, that had ſo great a Charge upon us at the Sea-ſide, could not ſpare long Time in thoſe Ceremonies, any more than I can do now for relating them. It is enough to mention, That he would not be excus'd at parting, from going back with us quite to the Ships, and when I would have excus'd it, he ſaid, Nay, *Seignior*, give me leave to go and fetch my Hoſtages. In ſhort, there was no reſiſting him, ſo we went all together, having ſtay'd Two Days more at his Houſe, and came all ſafe to our Ships, having been gone Forty Six Days from them.

We found the Ships in very good Condition, all ſafe on Board and well, except that the Men ſeem'd to have contracted ſomething of the Scurvy; which our *Spaniſh* Doctor, however, ſoon recovered them of.

Here we found the Two *Spaniſh* Youths, our Patron's Hoſtages, very well alſo, and very well pleaſed with their Entertainment: One of our Lieutenants had been teaching them Navigation, and ſomething of the Mathematicks, and they had made very good Improvement in thoſe Things, conſidering the Time they had been there; and the *Spaniard*, their Father, was ſo pleaſed with it, that having not Gold enough to offer the Lieutenant, as an Acknowledgment for his Teaching them, he gave him a very good Ring

from his Finger, having a fine large Emerald in it of good Value, and made him a long *Spaniſh* Compliment, for having nothing of better Value to offer him.

We now made Preparations for Sailing, and our Men, in my Abſence, had laid in a very conſiderable Supply of Proviſions, particularly excellent Pork, and pretty tolerable Beef, and a great Number of Goats and Hogs alive, as many as we could ſtow.

But I had now my main Undertaking to manage, I mean that of ſending out my little Army for Diſcovery, and having communicated my Deſign to the Supra Cargo, and the Perſon who I intruſted with him in the Command of the Ships, they unanimouſly approv'd of the Thing. My next Buſineſs was, To reſolve upon whom to confer the Command of the Expedition; and this, by general Conſent, fell upon the Lieutenant of the *Madagaſcar* Ship, who had taught the young *Spaniards* Navigation; and this the rather, becauſe he was naturally a bold, enterprizing Man, and alſo an excellent Geographer: Indeed he was a general Artiſt, and a Man faithful and vigilant in whatever he undertook, nor was it a little Conſideration with me, that he was ſo agreeable to the *Spaniard* and his Sons, of whoſe Aid we knew he would ſtand in ſo mnch need.

When I had communicated to him the Deſign, and he had both approv'd the Thing itſelf, and accepted the Command, we conſtituted him Captain, and the Two Midſhipmen we made Lieutenants for the Expedition,

pro-

promiſing each of them Five Hundred Pounds if they perform'd it: As for the Captain, we came to a good Agreement with him for his Reward; for I engaged to give him One Thouſand Pounds in Gold as ſoon as we met, if the Journey was perform'd effectually.

We then laid open the Undertaking to the Men, and left it to every one's Choice to go, or not to go, as they pleas'd; but inſtead of wanting Men to go Voluntier, we were fain to decide it by Lot, among ſome of them, they were all ſo eager to undertake it.

Then I gave them Articles and Conditions, which they, who ventur'd, ſhould engage themſelves to comply with, and particularly, That they ſhould not Mutiny, upon Pain of being Shot to Death when we met, or upon the Spot, if the Captain thought it neceſſary; That they ſhould not ſtraggle from their Company, nor be tempted by the View of picking up Gold, to ſtay behind, when the Company beat to March; That all the Gold they found in the Way, ſhould be in common, ſhould be put together in Bulk every Night, and be divided faithfully and equally at the End of the Journey, allowing only Five Shares to each Ship, to be divided as I ſhould direct; beſides which, upon Condition, That every Man behav'd himſelf faithfully and quietly, and did their Duty, I promiſed, That beſides the Gold they might get by the Way, I would give them every Man One Hundred Pounds at our Meeting; and if any Man was Sick or Maimed by the Way, they were to engage not to forſake and leave him on

any Account whatſoever, Death only excepted; and if any Man died, except by any Violence from the reſt, his Share of the Gold which was gotten, ſhould be faithfully kept for his Family, if he had any; but his Reward of One Hundred Pounds, which was not due, becauſe he did not live to demand it, ſhould be divided among the reſt: So that by this Agreement, the Undertaking was not ſo dear to me as I had expected; for the Pay of the Men amounted to no more than the Sum following, *viz.*

	l.
To the Lieut. now made Captain	1000
To the Midſhip-men, now made Lieutenants, each 500 *l.* - -	1000
To Fifty Men, each 100 *l.*	5000
To the Surgeon 200 *l.* and his Servant 100 *l.* over and above their 100 *l.* as being part of the Fifty Men - - - - - -	300
	7300

Having pitch'd upon the Men, I landed them, and made them Encamp on Shore: But firſt of all, I made them, every one, make Wills or Letters of Attorney, or other Diſpoſitions of their Effects, to ſuch Perſons as they thought fit, with an Account under their Hands, Endors'd on the Back of the ſaid Wills, &c. intimating what Cheſts or

or Cafes, or other Things they had on Board, and what was in them, and what Pay was due to them; and thofe Chefts, &c. were Sealed up before their Faces with my Seal, and Writings Sign'd by me, the Contents unknown: Thus they were fecure, that all they had left in the Ships, and all that was due to them, fhould be punctually and carefully kept, and delivered as it was defign'd and directed by themfelves; and this was greatly to their Satisfaction.

As to the Reward of One Hundred Pounds a Man, and the Articles about keeping together, obeying Orders, gathering up Gold, and the like; I did not read to them 'till they were all on Shore, and 'till I was ready to leave them; becaufe if the reft of the Men had heard it, I fhould have kept no Body with me to have fail'd the Ships.

There was as ftout a Company of bold, young, brisk Fellows of them, as ever went upon any Expedition, Fifty Three in Number, among them a Surgeon, and his Mate, very skilful and honeft Men both of them; a Trumpeter and a Drummer, Three Ship-Carpenters, a Cook, who was alfo a Butcher by Trade, and a Barber; Two Shoemakers, who had been Soldiers among the Pyrates; a Smith, and a Taylor of the fame, fo that they wanted no Mechanicks, whatever might happen to them.

Give the Fellows their Due, they took but little Baggage with them; but, however, what they had, I took Care, with the Affiftance of my good Patron, the *Spaniard*,

ſhould be as much carried for them as poſſible. I provided them Three large Tents, made of a Cotton Stuff, which I bought in the Country, and which we made up on Board, which Tents were large enough to cover them all, in caſe of Rain or Heat; but as for Beds, or Bedding, they had only Seven Hammocks, in Caſe any Man was Sick; for the reſt, they were to ſhift as well as they could; the Seaſon was Hot, and the Climate good; their Way lay in the Latitude of Forty to Fifty, and they ſet out in the latter end of the Month of *October*, which, on that Side of the Line, is the ſame as our *April*; ſo that the Covering was more to keep them from the Heat than the Cold.

It was needful, in order to their Defence, to furniſh them with Arms and Ammunition; ſo I gave to every Man a Muſquet or Fuſee, a Piſtol and a Sword, with Cartouches, and a good Stock of Ammunition, Powder and Shot, with Three ſmall Barrels of fine Powder for Store, and Lead in proportion; and theſe Things were, indeed, the heavieſt Part of their Baggage, excepting the Carpenters Tools, and the Surgeons Box of Medicines.

As for the carrying all theſe Things, they might eaſily furniſh themſelves with Mules or Horſes for Carriage, while they had Money to pay for them, and you may judge how that could be wanting, by what has been ſaid of the Country.

We gave them, however, a good large Pack of *European* Goods, to make agreeable Preſents where they received Favours; ſuch as

Black

Black Bays, Pieces of Says, Serge, Calamanca, Drugget, Hats and Stockings; not forgetting another Pack of Hatchets, Knives, Sizzers, Beads, Toys, and ſuch Things, to pleaſe the Natives of the Plain Country, if they ſhould meet with any.

They deſir'd a few Hand-Granadoes, and we gave them about a Dozen, but as they were heavy, it would have been very troubleſome to have carried more.

The *Spaniard* ſtay'd 'till all this was done, and 'till the Men were ready to march, and then told us privately, That it would not be proper for him to march along with them, or to appear openly, to countenance the Enterprize; That my Two Lieutenants knew the Way perfectly well; and that he would go before to his own Houſe, and they ſhould hear of him by the Way.

All the Mules and Horſes which he had lent us, to bring us back, he left with them to carry their Baggage, and our new Captain had bought Six more privately in the Country.

The laſt Inſtructions I gave to our Men, was, That they ſhould make the beſt of their Way over the Country beyond the Mountains; That they ſhould take the exact Diſtances of Places, and keep a Journal of their March, ſet up Croſſes and Marks at all proper Places; and that they ſhould ſteer their Courſe, as near as they could, between the Latitude of Forty, where they would enter the Country, and the Latitude of Forty Five *South*; ſo that they would go an *E. S. E.* Courſe moſt of the Way, and that where-ever they made

made the Shore, they ſhould ſeek for a Creek or Port where the Ships might come to an Anchor, and look out Night and Day for the Ships; the Signals alſo were agreed on, and they had Two Dozen of Rockets to throw up, if they diſcovered us at Sea; they had all neceſſary Inſtruments for Obſervation alſo, and Perſpective Glaſſes, Pocket Compaſſes, *&c.* and thus they ſet out, *October* 24th, 1715.

We ſtay'd Five Days after they began their March, by Agreement, That if any Oppoſition had been offer'd them in the Country, or any Umbrage taken at their Deſign, ſo that it could not be executed, we might have Notice. But as the *Spaniards* in the Country, who are the moſt ſupinely negligent People in the World, had not the leaſt Shadow of Intelligence, and took them only to be *French* Seamen, belonging to the Two *French* Ships (ſuch we paſt for) who had lain there ſo long, they knew nothing when they went away, much leſs whither; but, no queſtion, they believ'd, that they were all gone on Board again.

We ſtay'd Three Days longer than we appointed, and hearing nothing amiſs from them, we were ſatisfy'd that all was Right with them; ſo we put to Sea, ſtanding off to the *West*, 'till we were out of Sight of the Shore, and then we ſtood away due *South*, with a freſh Gale at *N. W.* by *W.* and fair Weather, tho' the Wind chopped about ſoon after, and we had Calms and Hot Weather that did us no good, but made our Men Sick and Lazy.

The

The ſuppoſed Journey of our Travellers, their March, and the Adventures they ſhould meet with by the Way, were, indeed, ſufficient Diverſion; and employ'd us all with Diſcourſe, as well in the Great Cabbin and Round-Houſe, as afore the Maſt, and Wagers were very rife among us, who ſhou'd come firſt to the Shore of *Patagonia*, for ſo we call'd it.

As for the Place, neither they nor we could make any Gueſs at what part of the Country they ſhould make the Sea; but as for us, we reſolved to make the Port St. *Julian* our firſt Place to put in at, which is in the Latitude of Fifty Degrees Five Minutes, and that then, as Wind and Weather would permit, we would keep the Coaſt as near as we could, 'till we came to *Punta de St. Helena*, where we would Ride for ſome Time, and, if poſſible, 'till we heard of them.

We had but a croſs Voyage to the Mouth of the Straights of *Magellan*, having contrary Winds, as I have ſaid, and ſometimes bad Weather; ſo that it was the Thirteenth of *December* when we made an Obſervation, and found Ourſelves in the Latitude of Fifty Two Degrees Thirty Minutes, which is juſt the Height of *Cape Victoria*, at the Mouth of the Paſſage. Some of our Officers were very much for paſſing the Straights, and not going about by *Cape Horn*; but the Uncertainty of the Winds in the Paſſage, the Danger of the Currents, *&c.* made it by no Means adviſable, ſo we reſolved to keep good Sea-room.

The Twenty Fifth of *December*, we found Ourſelves in the Latitude of Sixty two Degrees Thirty Minutes, and being *Chriſtmas* Day, I feaſted the Men, and drank the Health of our Travellers; our Courſe was *S. E.* by *S.* the Wind *S. W.* then we chang'd our Courſe and went away *E.* for Eight Days, and having made freſh Way, ſtood away, without Obſervation, *E. N. E.* and in Two Days more, made the Land, on the *Eaſt* of the Straight *de la Mare*, ſo that we were oblig'd to ſtand away *E. S. E.* to take more Sea-room, when the Wind veering to the *S.* by *E.* a freſh Gale, we ſtood boldly away due *North*, and running large, ſoon found that we were entred into the *North* Sea, on *Twelfth Day*; for Joy of which, and to Celebrate the Day, I gave every Meſs a Piece of *Engliſh* Beef, and a Piece of *Chilian* Pork, and made a great Bowl of Punch afore the Maſt, as well as in the Great Cabbin, which made our Men very chearful, and, inſtead of a Twelfth-Cake, I gave the Cook order to make every Meſs a good Plumb-Pudding, which pleas'd them all as well.

But while we were at our Liquor, and merry, the Wind came about to the *N. E.* and blew very hard, threatning us with a Storm, and as the Shore lay on our Leeward Quarter, we were not without Apprehenſions of being driven on ſome dangerous Places, and forced to ride upon Life and Death, where we could have no Shelter; I immediately therefore, alter'd my Courſe, and ran away *Eaſt* all Night, to have as much Sea-room as poſſible;

poſſible: The next Day the Wind abated, and haling away to the *Eaſt*, we ſtood *Northward* again, and then *N. W.* in Three Days more, and we made Land, which appear'd to be the Head Iſland of Port St. *Julian*, on the *North* Side of the Port where we run in, and about an Hour before Sun-ſet, came to an Anchor in Eleven Fathom good holding Ground, Latitude Forty Nine Degrees Eighteen Minutes.

We wanted freſh Water, otherwiſe we would not have made any ſtay here at all, for we knew we were a little too far to the *South*; however, we were oblig'd to fill freſh Water here for Three Days together, the watering Place being a good way up the River, and the Swell of the Sea running very high.

During this Interval, Captain *Merlote* and I went on Shore with about Thirty Men, and march'd up the Country near Twenty Miles, getting up to the Top of the Hills, where we made Fires, and at the fartheſt Hill we Encamped all Night, and threw up Five Rockets, which was our Signal; but we ſaw nothing to anſwer it, nor any Sign, either of *Engliſh* People or Natives, in all the Country.

We ſaw a Noble Champian Country, the Plains all ſmooth, and cover'd with Graſs like *Salisbury* Plain, very little Wood to be ſeen any where, inſomuch, that we could not get any thing but Graſs to make a Smoke with, which was another of our Signals. We ſhot ſome Fowls here, and Five or Six Hares; the Hares are as large as an *Engliſh*

Fox,

Fox, and Burrow in the Earth like a Rabbet: The Fowls we ſhot, were Duck and Mallard, Teal and Widgeon, the ſame as in *England* in Shape and Size, only the Colour generally Grey, with White in the Breaſt, and Green Heads, the Fleſh the ſame as ours, and very good.

We ſaw Wild Geeſe and Wild Swans, but ſhot none; we ſaw, alſo, Guinacoes or *Peruvian* Sheep, as big as ſmall Mules, but could not come at them neither; for as ſoon as we ſtepp'd towards them, they would call to one another, to give Notice of us, and then troop all together, and be gone.

This is an excellent Country for Feeding and Breeding of Sheep and Horſes, the Graſs being ſhort, but very ſweet and good on the Plains, and very long and rich near the freſh Rivers, and were it Cultivated and Stock'd with Cattle, would, without doubt, produce excellent Kinds of all Sorts of Cattle; nor could it fail of producing excellent Corn, as well Wheat as Barley and Oats; and as for Peas, they grow Wild all over the Country, and nouriſh an infinite Number of a Birdlike Pigeons, which fly in Flights ſo great, that they ſeem in the Air like Clouds at a great Diſtance.

As for the Soil, that of the Hills is Gravel and ſome Stony, but that of the Plains, is a light, black Mould, and in ſome Places a rich Loam, and ſome Marle; all of which are Tokens of Fruitfulneſs, ſuch as indeed never fail.

The Fourteenth of *January* (the Weather being hot, and Days long, for this was their *July*) we weighed and ſtood *Northerly* along the Shore, the Coaſt running from Port St. *Julian* N. N. E. 'till we arriv'd at the famous Iſlands called *Penguin* Iſlands; and here we came to an Anchor again, in the ſame round Bay which Sir *John Narborough* called *Port Deſire*, it being the Seventeenth of *January*.

Here we found a Poſt, or Croſs, erected by Sir *John Narborough*, with a Plate of Copper nailed to it, and an Inſcription, ſignifying, That he had taken Poſſeſſion of that Country in the Name of King *Charles* II. Our Men raiſed a Shout for Joy that they were in their own King's Dominions, or, as they ſaid, in their own Country; and, indeed, excepting that it was not inhabited by *Engliſhmen*, and cultivated, planted, and incloſed, after the *Engliſh* Manner, I never ſaw a Country in the World ſo like *England*

Here we victualled our Ships with a new kind of Food; for we loaded ourſelves with Seals, of which here are an infinite Number, and which we ſalted and eat, and our Men liked them wonderfully for a while; but they ſoon began to be weary of them: Alſo the *Penguins* are a very wholeſome Diet, and very pleaſant, eſpecially when a little ſalted; and as for Salt, we could have loaded our Ship with it, being very good and white, made by the Sun, and found in ſtanding Ponds of Salt-water, near the Shore.

The

The *Penguins* are ſo eaſily kill'd, and are found in ſuch vaſt Multitudes on that Iſland, (which, for that Reaſon, is ſo called) that our Men loaded the Long-boat with them twice in one Day, and we reckoned there were no leſs than Seven thouſand in the Boat each Time.

Here we travelled up into the Country in Search of our Men, and made our Signals, but had no Anſwer to them, nor heard any Intelligence of them. We ſaw ſome People here at a Diſtance, ſcattering about; but they were but few, nor would they be brought by any Means to converſe with us, or come near us.

We ſpread ourſelves over the Country far and wide; and here we ſhot Hares and Wild-Fowl again in Abundance, the Country being much the ſame as before, but ſomething more buſhy, and here and there a few Trees, but they were a great way off. There is a large River which empties itſelf into this Bay.

Finding no News here of our Men, I ordered the *Madagaſcar* Ship to weigh and ſtand farther *North*, keeping as near the Shore as he might with Safety, and cauſing his Men to look out for the Signals, which, if they diſcovered, they ſhould give us Notice by firing Three Guns.

They ſailed the Height of *Cape Blanco*, where the Land falling back, makes a deep Bay, and the Sea receives into it a great River at ſeveral Mouths, ſome of them Twenty Leagues from the other, all farther *North*.

North. Here they ſtood into the Bay 'till they made the Land again; for at the firſt Opening of the Bay, they could not ſee the Bottom of it, the Land lying very low.

The Captain was doubtful what he ſhould do upon the Appearance of ſo large a Bay, and was loth to ſtand farther in, leſt the Land, puſhing out into the Sea again afterwards, and a Gale ſpringing up from Seaward, they might be ſhut into a Bay where they had no Knowledge of the Ground; and upon this Caution, they reſolved among themſelves to come to an Anchor for that Evening, and to put farther out to Sea the next Morning.

Accordingly, the next Morning, he weigh'd, and ſtood off to Sea; but the Weather being very fine, and the little Wind that blew, being *S.W.* by *S.* he ventured to ſtand in for the Shore, where he found Two or Three ſmall Creeks, and one large River, and ſending in his *Shalloup* to ſound, and find out a good Place to ride in, upon their making the Signal to him, that they had found ſuch a Place, he ſtood in, and came to an Anchor in Eleven Fathom good Ground, Half a League from the Shore, and well defended from the *Northerly* and *Eaſterly* Winds, which were the Winds we had any Reaſon to fear.

Having thus brought his Ship to an Anchor, he ſent his *Shalloup* along the Shore to give me an Account of it, and deſire me to come up to him, which accordingly we did; and here we reſolved to ride for ſome Time, in hopes

to hear from our little Army. We went on Shore, ſome or other of us, every Day, and eſpecially when Five of our Men, going on Shore on the *North* Side of the River, had ſhot Three *Peruvian* Sheep, and a black wild Bull; for after that, they ranged the Country far and near to find more, but could never come within Shot of them, except Three Bulls and a Cow, which they kill'd after a long Chaſe.

We lay here 'till the Sixteenth of *February*, without any News of our Travellers, as I called them. All the Hopes we had, was, that Five of our Men, aſking my Leave to travel, ſwore to me, They would go quite up to the *Andes*, but they would find them; nay, They would go to the *Spaniſh* Gentleman himſelf, if they did not hear of them; and obliged me to ſtay Twenty Days for them, and no longer. This I promiſed them, and giving them every thing they aſked, and Two of the *Peruvian* Sheep to carry their Ammunition, with Two Dozen of Rockets for Signals, a Speaking-Trumpet, and a good Perſpective-Glaſs, away they went; and from them we had yet heard no News, ſo that was our preſent Hope.

They travelled, as they afterwards gave an Account, One hundred and Twenty Miles up the Country, 'till they were at laſt forced to reſolve to kill one of their *Guinacos*, or Sheep, to ſatisfy their Hunger, which was a great Grief to them; for their Luggage was heavy to carry; but, I ſay, they only reſolved on it, for juſt as they were going to

do

do it, one of them rouzed a Deer with a Fawn, and, by great good luck, ſhot them both; for having killed the Doe, the Fawn ſtood ſtill by her, 'till he had loaded his Piece again, and ſhot that alſo.

This ſupplied them for Four or Five Days plentifully, and the laſt Day, one of my Men, being by the Bank of the River, for they kept as near the River as they could, in hopes to hear of them that Way, ſaw ſomething black come driving down the Stream; he could not reach it, but calling one of his Fellows, their Curioſity was ſuch, that the other, being a good Swimmer, ſtripped, and put off to it, and when he came to it, he found it was a Man's Hat; this made them conclude their Fellows were not far off, and that they were coming by Water.

Upon this, they made to the firſt Riſing Ground they could come at, and there they encamped, and, at Night, fired ſome Rockets, (they kept looking out, you may be ſure) and after the Third Rocket was fired, they, to their great Joy, ſaw Two Rockets riſe up from the *Weſtward*, and ſoon after that, a Third; and in Two Days more, they all joyfully met, as you ſhall hear.

We had been here, as I have ſaid, impatiently expecting them a great while; but at laſt, the Man at the Main-Top, who was ordered to look out, called aloud to us below, that he ſaw a Flaſh of Fire, and immediately, the Men looking to Land-ward, they ſaw Two Rockets riſe up in the Air at a great Diſtance, which we anſwered by firing

Three Rockets again, and they returned by One Rocket, to ſignify, that they ſaw our Mens Signal.

This was a joyful Exchange of diſtant Language to both Sides, but I was not there; for being impatient, I had put out, and ſailed about Ten Leagues farther; but our Ship fired Three Guns to give me Notice, which, however, we heard not, and yet we knew they fired too; for, it being in the Night, our Men, who were very attentive with their Eyes, as well as Ears, ſaw plainly the Three Flaſhes of the Guns, though they could not hear the Report, the Wind being contrary. This was ſuch certain Intelligence to me, and I was ſo impatient to know how Things went, that, having alſo a ſmall Gale of Wind, I weighed immediately, and ſtood back again to our other Ship; it was not, however, 'till the Second Day after we weighed, that we came up to them, having little or no Wind all the Firſt Day; the next Day, in the Morning, they ſpied us, and fired the Three Guns again, being the Signal, that they had got News of our Friends.

Nothing could be more to my Satisfaction, than to hear, that they had got News, and it was as much to their Satisfaction as to ours, to be ſure, I mean our little Army; for if any Diſaſter had happened to us, they had been in a very odd Condition; and tho' they might have found Means to ſubſiſt, yet they would have been out of all Hope of ever returning to their own Country.

Upon

Upon the Signal, I ſtood into the Bay, and came to an Anchor at about a League to the *Northward* of our other Ship, and as far from the Shore; and, as it were, in the Mouth of the River, waiting for another Signal from our Men, by which we might judge, which Side of the River to go a Shore at, and might take ſome proper Meaſures to come at them.

About Five a Clock in the Evening, our Eyes, being all up in the Air, and towards the Hills, for the appointed Signals, beheld, to our great Surprize, a *Canoe* come rowing to us out of the Mouth of the River; immediately we went to work with our Perſpective Glaſſes. One ſaid it was one Thing, and one ſaid it was another, 'till I fetched out a large Telleſcope out of the Cabbin, and with that I could eaſily ſee they were my own Men, and it was to our inexpreſſible Satisfaction, that they ſoon after came directly on Board.

It might very well take up another Volume, as large as this, to give a farther Account of the Particulars of their Journey, or rather their Journey and Voyage; How they got through the Hills, and were entertained by the generous *Spaniard*; and afterwards by the Wealthy *Chilian*: How the Men, greedy for Gold, were hardly brought away from the Mountains: And how, once, they had much ado to perſuade them not to rob the honeſt *Chilian* who had uſed them ſo well, 'till my Lieutenant, then their Captain, by a Stratagem ſeized on all their Weapons, and

 threatned

threatned to ſpeak to the *Spaniard* to raiſe all the *Chilians* in the Mountains, and have all their Throats cut; and yet, that even this did not ſuffice, 'till the Two Midſhipmen, then their Lieutenants, aſſured them, that at the firſt Opening of the Hills, and in the Rivers beyond, they would have Plenty of Gold; and one of the Midſhipmen told them, That if he did not ſee them have ſo much Gold, that they would not ſtoop to take up any more, they ſhould have all his Share to be divided among them, and ſhould leave him behind in the firſt deſolate Place they could find.

How this appeaſed them 'till they came to the outer Edge of the Mountains, where I had been, and where my Patron the *Spaniard* left them, having ſupplied them with Sixteen Mules to carry their Baggage, and ſome Guinacoes, or Sheep of *Peru*, which would carry Burthens, and afterwards be good to eat alſo.

Alſo, How here they mutiny'd again, and would not be drawn away, being inſatiable in their Thirſt after the Gold, 'till about Twenty, more reaſonable than the reſt, were content to move forward; and, after ſome Time, the reſt followed, though not 'till they were aſſured, that the picking up of Gold continued all along the River, which began at the Bottom of the Mountains, and that it was likely to continue a great way farther.

How

How they worked their Way down theſe Streams, with ſtill an inſatiable Avarice and Thirſt after the Gold, to the Lake called *The Golden-Lake*, and how here they were aſtoniſhed at the Quantity they found: How, after this, they had great Difficulty to furniſh themſelves with Proviſions, and greater ſtill, in carrying it along with them 'till they found more.

I ſay, All theſe Accounts might ſuffice to make a Volume as large as all the reſt: How, at the farther End of this Lake, they found that it evacuated itſelf into a large River, which, running away, with a ſtrong Current, to the *S. S. E.* and afterwards to the *S.* by *E.* encouraged them to build Canoes, in which they imbarked, and which River brought them down to the very Bay where we found them; but that they met with many Difficulties, ſunk, and ſtaved their Canoes ſeveral Times, by which they loſt ſome of their Baggage, and, in one Diſaſter, loſt a great Parcel of their Gold, to their great Surprize and Mortification: How, at one Place, they ſplit Two of their Canoes, where they could find no Timber to build new ones, and the many Hardſhips they were put to before they got other Canoes; But I ſhall give a brief Account of it all, and bring it into as narrow a Compaſs as I can.

They ſet out, as I have ſaid, with Mules and Horſes to carry their Baggage, and the *Spaniard* gave them a Servant with them for a Guide, who carrying them By-ways, and Unfrequented, ſo that they might give no

Alarm at the Town of *Villa Rica*, or any where elſe, they came to the Mouth of the Entrance into the Mountains, and there they pitched their Tent.

N. B. The Lieutenant who kept their Journal, giving an Account of this, merrily, in his Sea Language, expreſſes it thus; *Being all come ſafe into the Opening that is in the Entrance of the Mountains, and being there free from the Obſervation of the Country, we called it our firſt Port, ſo we* brought too, *and came* to an Anchor.

Here the generous *Spaniard*, who, at his own Requeſt, was gone before, ſent his Gentleman, and one of his Sons, to them, and ſent them Plenty of Proviſions, as alſo cauſed their Mules to be changed for others that were freſh, and had not been fatigued with any of the other Part of the Journey.

Theſe Things being done, the *Spaniard*'s Gentleman cauſed them to decamp, and march Two Days farther into the Mountains, and then they encamped again, where the *Spaniard* himſelf came *Incognito* to them, and, with the utmoſt Kindneſs and Generoſity, was their Guide himſelf, and their Purveyor alſo, though Two or Three Times, the Fellows were ſo rude, ſo ungovernable, and unbounded in their hunting after Gold, that the *Spaniard* was almoſt frighted at them, and told the Captain of it: Nor, indeed, was it altogether without Cauſe; for the Dogs were ſo ungrateful, that they robbed Two of the Houſes

Houſes of the *Chilians*, and took what Gold they had, which was not much indeed, but it hazarded ſo much the Alarming the Country, and raiſing all the *Mountaineers* upon them, that the *Spaniard* was upon the Point of flying from them, in Spight of all their Fire-Arms and Courage.

But the Captain begged him to ſtay one Night more, and promiſed to have the Fellows puniſhed, and Satisfaction to be made; and ſo he brought all his Men together and talked to them, and enquired who it was: But never was ſuch a piece of Work in the World: When the new Captain came to talk of who did it, and of Puniſhment, they cryed, They all did it, and they did not value all the *Spaniards* or *Indians* in the Country; they would have all the Gold in the whole Mountain, ay, that they would, By——and ſwore to it, and if the *Spaniard* offer'd to ſpeak a Word to them, they would whip his Head off, and the like.

However, a little Reaſoning with them, brought ſome of the Men to their Senſes, and the Captain, who was a Man of Senſe and of a ſmooth Tongue, managed ſo well, that he brought about 22 of the Men, and the Two Lieutenants and Surgeons to declare for his Opinion, and that they would act better for the future; and with theſe, he clapt in between the other Fellows, and ſeparated about 18 of them from their Arms, for they had run ſcattering among the Rocks to hunt for Gold, and when they were called to this Parley, had not their Weapons with them: By this Stratagem

Stratagem he ſeized Eleven of the Thieves, and made them Priſoners; and then he told the reſt in ſo many Words, that if they would not comply to keep Order, and obey the Rules they were at firſt ſworn to, and had promiſed, he would force them to it, for he would deliver them, bound Hand and Foot, to the *Spaniards*, and they ſhould do the poor *Chilians* Juſtice upon them; for that, in ſhort, he would not have the reſt murthered for them; upon this, he ordered his Men to draw up, to ſhew them he would be as good as his Word, but they conſidered of it, and ſubmitted.

But the *Spaniard* had taken a wiſer Courſe than this, or, perhaps, they had been all murthered; for, he ran to the two *Chilian* Houſes where the Rogues had plunder'd, and where, in ſhort, there was a kind of little Hubbub about it, and with good Words, promiſing to give them as much Gold as they loſt, and the Price of ſome other Things that were taken away, he appeaſed the People; and ſo our Men were not ruined, as they would certainly have been, if the Mountaineers had taken the Alarm.

After this, they grew a little more governable, but, in ſhort, the Sight of the Gold, and the eaſy getting it, for they pick'd it up in abundance of Places; I ſay, the Sight of the Gold, made them ſtark mad; for now, they were not as they were before, trafficking for the Owners and for the Voyage: But, as I had promiſed the Gold they got ſhould be their own, and that they were now Working for themſelves, there was no getting them to go

on,

on, but, in ſhort, they would dwell here;and this was as fatal a Humour as the other.

But to bring this part of the Voyage to an End, after Eight Days they came to the Hoſpitable Wealthy *Chilian*'s Houſe, who I mention'd before; and here, as the *Spaniard* had contriv'd it, they found all kind of needful Stores for Proviſions laid up, as it were, on purpoſe; and, in a Word, here they were not Fed only, but Feaſted.

Here again, the Captain diſcovered a curſed Conſpiracy, which, had it taken Effect, would, beſides the Baſeneſs of the Fact, have ended in their total Deſtruction; in ſhort, they had reſolved to rob this *Chilian* who was ſo kind to them; but, as I ſaid, one of the Lieutenants diſcovered and detected this villainous Contrivance, and quaſh'd it, ſo as never to let the *Spaniard* know of it.

But, I ſay, to end this Part; They were One and Twenty Days in this Traverſe, for they could not go on ſo eaſy and ſo faſt, now they were a little Army, as we did, who were but Six or Seven; At length they came to the View of the open Country, and, being all Encamped, at the Edge of a Deſcent, the Generous *Spaniard*, and his three Servants, took his Leave, wiſhing them a good Journey, and ſo went back, having the Day before, brought them ſome Deer, Five or Six Cows and ſome Sheep, for their Subſiſting at their Entrance into, and Travel thro' the plain Country.

And now they began to deſcend towards the Plain, but they met with more Difficulty here than they expected; for, as I obſerved, that the Way, for ſome Miles, went with an Aſcent, towards the fartheſt part of the Hill, that continued Aſcent, had by Degrees, brought them to a very great, and, in ſome Places, an unpaſſable Deſcent; ſo that, however my Guide found his Way down, when I was through, it was not ſo eaſy for them to do it, who were ſo many in Number, and incumbred with Mules and Horſes, and with their Baggage, ſo that they knew not what to do; and if they had not known that our Ships were gone away, there had been ſome Odds, but, like the old *Iſraelites*, they would have murmured againſt their Leader, and have all gone back to *Egypt*. In a Word, they were at their Wits End, and knew not what Courſe to take for two or three Days, trying and eſſaying to get down here and there, and then frighted with Precipices and Rocks, and climbing up to get back again; the whole of the Matter was, that they had miſs'd a narrow Way, where they ſhould have turn'd off to the *S. E.* the Marks which our Men had made before, having not been ſo regular and exact juſt there, as in other Parts of the Way, or ſome other Turning being ſo very like the ſame, that they took one for the other; and thus going ſtraight forward too far, before they turn'd, they came to an Opening indeed, and ſaw the plain Country under them, as they had done before; but the Deſcent was not ſo practicable.

After

After they had puzzled themſelves here, as I ſaid, two or three Days, one of the Lieutenants and a Man with him, ſeeing a Hut or Houſe of a *Chilian* at ſome Diſtance, rode away towards it ; but paſſing into a Valley that lay between, he met with a River which he could by no means get over with the Mules ; ſo he came back again in Deſpair : The Captain then reſolved to ſend back to the honeſt rich *Chilian*, who had entertained them ſo well, for a Guide, or to deſire him to give them ſuch Directions, as they might not miſtake.

But as the Perſon ſent back, was one of thoſe who had taken the Journal which I mentioned, and was therefore greatly vex'd at miſſing his Way in ſuch a Manner ; ſo he had his Eyes in every Corner, and pulled out his Pocket-Book at every Turning, to ſee how the Marks of Places agreed ; and at laſt, the very next Morning after he ſet out, he ſpied the Turning where they ſhould all have gone in, to have come to the Place which they were at before : This being ſo remarkable a Diſcovery, he came back again directly, without going on to the *Chilian*'s Houſe, which was two Days Journey farther.

Our Men were reviv'd with this Diſcovery, and all agreed to march back ; ſo, having loſt about Six Days in this falſe Step, they got into the right Way, and in Four more, came to the Deſcent, where I had been before.

Here the Hill was ſtill very high, and the Paſſage down, was ſteep and difficult enough ; but ſtill, it was practicable, and our Men could ſee the Marks of Cattle having paſs'd

there,

there, as if they had gone in Drifts or Droves; also it was apparent, that, by ſome Help and Labour of Hands, the Way might be led Winding and Turning on the Slope of the Hill, ſo as to make it much eaſier to get down than it was now.

It coſt them no ſmall Labour, however, to get down, chiefly becauſe of the Mules, which very often fell down with their Loads, and our Men ſaid, they believ'd, they could, with much more Eaſe, have mounted up from the *Eaſt* Side to the Top, than they came from the *Weſt* Side to the Bottom.

They incamped one Night on the Declivity of the Hill, but got up early, and was at the Bottom and on the plain Ground by Noon: As ſoon as they came there, they incamped and refreſhed themſelves, *that is to ſay*, went to Dinner; but it being very hot there, the cool Breezes of the Mountains having now left them, they were more inclined to Sleep than to Eat; ſo the Captain ordered the Tent to be ſet up, and they made the whole Day of it, calling a Council in the Morning to conſider what Courſe they ſhould ſteer, and how they ſhould go on.

Here they came to this Reſolution, That they ſhould ſend a Man or two, a conſiderable Way up the Hill again; to take the ſtricteſt Obſervation he could of the Plain, with the largeſt Glaſſes they had, and to mark which Way the neareſt River or Water was to be ſeen; and they ſhould direct their Courſe, firſt to the Water, and that if the Courſe of it lay *S.* or any way to the *E.* of the *S.* they would follow

follow on the Bank of it, and as ſoon as it was large enough to carry them, they would make them ſome Canoes or Shaloups, or what they could do, with the moſt Eaſe, to carry them on by Water; alſo they directed him to obſerve if he could ſee any Cattle feeding at a Diſtance, or the like.

The Meſſenger returned, and brought them Word, that all the Way to the *E.* and ſo on to *S. E.* they could diſcover nothing of Water, but that they had ſeen a great Lake or Lough of Water at a great Diſtance, which looked like a Sea, and lay from them to the *Northward* of the *Eaſt*, about two Points; adding, That they did not know, but it might afterwards empty it ſelf to the *Eaſtward*, and it was their Opinion to make the beſt of their Way thither.

Accordingly the next Morning they decamped and marched *E. N. E.* very chearfully, but found the Way much longer than they expected; for though from the Mountains, the Country ſeemed to lie flat and plain, yet when they came to meaſure it by their Feet, they found a great many little Hills; Little, I ſay, compared to the great Mountains, but Great to them who were to Travel over them in the Heat, and with but very indifferent Support as to Proviſions; ſo that in a Word, the Captain very prudently ordered, that they ſhould travel one three Hours in the Morning, and three Hours in the Evening, and incamp in the Heat of the Day, to refreſh themſelves as well as they could.

The beſt Thing they met with in that Part of the Country, was, That they had Plenty of Water; for though they were not yet come to any large conſiderable River, yet, every low piece of Ground, had a ſmall Rill of Water in it; and the Springs coming out from the riſing Grounds, on the Sides of the Mountains, being innumerable, made many ſuch ſmall Brooks.

It coſt them Six Days Travel, with Two Days Reſting between, to advance to that River of Water, which, from the Height of the Mountains, ſeemed to be but a little Way off; They could not march, by their Computation, above Ten or Twelve Miles a Day, and reſt every third Day too; for their Luggage was heavy, and their Mules but few; alſo ſome of their Mules tyred and jaded, by their long March, or fell lame, and were good for nothing.

Beſides all this, the Days which I call Days of Reſt, were really not ſo to them, for thoſe Intervals were imployed to range about and hunt for Food; and it was for that, more than for Want of Reſt, that they halted every Third Day.

In this Exerciſe they did, however, meet with ſuch Succeſs, that they made ſhift to kill one ſort of Creature or another every Day, ſufficient to keep them from famiſhing; ſometimes they met with ſome Deer, other times with the *Guinacoes* or *Peruvian* Sheep, and ſometimes with Fowls of ſeveral kinds, ſo that they did pretty well for Food: At length, *viz.* the Seventh Day, they came to a River, which was at firſt ſmall, but having received another ſmall River or two from the *Northern* Part of the

Country,

Country, began to ſeem large enough for their Purpoſe, and as it ran *E. S. E.* they concluded it would run into the Lake, and that they might Fleet down this River, if they could make any thing to carry them.

But their firſt Diſcouragement was, the Country was all open, with very little Wood, and no Trees, or very few, to be found large enough to make *Canoes*, or Boats of any Sort; but the Skill of their Carpenters, of which they had Four, ſoon conquered this Difficulty; for coming to a low ſwampy Ground, on the Side of the River, they found a Tree ſomething like a Beech, very firm good ſort of Wood; and yet ſoft enough to Work eaſy; and they went to Work with this, and, at firſt, made them ſome Rafts, ; which they thought might carry them along, till the River was bigger.

While this was doing (which took up two or three Days) the Men ſtraggled up and down; ſome with their Guns to ſhoot Fowls, ſome with Contrivances to catch Fiſh, ſome one thing, ſome another; when, on a ſudden, one of their Fiſhermen, not in the River, but in a little Brook, which afterwards run into the River, found a little bit of ſhining Stuff among the Sand, or Earth, in the Bank; and one cryed, he had found a piece of Gold: Now it ſeems all was not Gold that gliſter'd, for the Lump had no Gold in it, whatever it was; but the Word being given out at firſt, it immediately ſet all our Men a Romaging the Shores of every little Rill of Water they came at, to ſee if there was no Gold; and they had not looked long, but they found ſeveral little

Grains of Gold very ſmall and fine, not only in this Brook, but in ſeveral others : So they ſpent their Time the more chearfully, becauſe they made ſome Purchaſe.

All this while they ſaw no People, nor any Signals of any, except once on the other Side of the River, at a great Diſtance, they thought they ſaw about Thirty together, but whether Men or Women, or how many of each, they could not tell, nor would they come any nearer ; only ſtood and gazed at our People at a Diſtance.

They were now ready to quit their Camp and embark, intending to lay all their Baggage on the Rafts, with three or four Sick Men, and ſo the reſt to march by the River-Side, and as many as could, to ride upon the Mules ; when, on a ſudden, all their Navigation was put to a Stop, and their new Veſſels, ſuch as they were, ſuffered a Wreck : The Caſe was thus, They had obſerved a great many black Clouds to hang over the Tops of the Mountains, and ſome of them even below the Tops, and they did believe it rained among the Hills ; but in the Plain where they lay, and all about them, it was fair, and the Weather fine.

But in the Night, the Carpenters and their Aſſiſtants, who had ſet up a little Tent near the River Side, were alarmed with a great roaring Noiſe (as they thought) in the River, tho' at a Diſtance upwards ; preſently after, they found the Water begin to come into their Tent ; when, running out, they found the River

River was ſwelling over its Banks, and all the low Grounds on both Sides of them.

To their great Satisfaction it was juſt break of Day, ſo that they could ſee enough to make their Way from the Water; and the Land very happily riſing a little to the *S.* of the River, they immediately fled thither; two of them had ſo much Preſence of Mind with them, as to pick up their Working-Tools, at leaſt ſome of them, and carry off, and the Water riſing gradually, the other two Carpenters ventured back to ſave the reſt; but they were put to it to get back again with them; in a Word, the Water roſe to ſuch a Height, that it carried away their Tent, and every Thing that was in it, and, which was worſe, their Rafts, (for they had almoſt finiſhed Four large Rafts) were all lifted off from the Place where they were fram'd, which was a kind of a dry Dock, and daſh'd all to Pieces, and the Timber, ſuch as it was, all carried away: The ſmaller Brooks alſo ſwell'd in Proportion to the larger River; ſo that, in a Word, our Men lay, as it were, ſurrounded with Water, and began to be in a terrible Conſternation; for tho' they lay in a hard dry Piece of Ground, too high for the Land-Flood to reach them, yet had the Rains continued in the Mountains, they might have lain there till they had been oblig'd to eat one another, and ſo there had been an End of our new Diſcovery.

But the Weather clear'd up among the Hills the next Day, which hearten'd them up again; and as the Flood roſe ſo ſoon, ſo the Current

being furiously rapid, the Waters run off again as easily as they came on, and in Two Days the Water was all gone again. But our little Float was shipwreck'd, as I have said, and the Carpenters finding how dangerous such great unweildy Rafts would be, resolved to set to it, and build one large Float with Sides to it like a Punt or Ferry-boat. They work'd so hard at this, Ten of the Men always working with them to help, that in Five Days they had her finished: The only Thing they wanted was Pitch and Tar, to make her Upper-Work keep out the Water; and they made a Shift to fetch a Juice out of some of the Wood they had cut, by Help of Fire, that answered the End tolerably well.

But that which made this Disappointment less afflicting, was, That our other Men hunting about the small Streams where this Water had come down so furiously, found that there was more Gold, and the more for the late Flood. This made them run straggling up the Streams; and, as the Captain said, he thought once they would run quite back to the Mountains again.

But that was his Ignorance too, for after a while, and the nearer they came to the Rising of the Hills, the Quantity abated; for where the Streams were so furious, the Water wash'd it all away, and carried it down with it; so that by the End of Five Days the Men found but little, and began to come back again.

But then they discovered, that, tho' there was less in the higher Part of the Rivers, there was more farther down, and they found

it

it ſo well worth while, that they went fiſhing along for Gold all the Way towards the Lake, and left their Fellows and the Boat to come after.

At laſt, when nothing elſe would do it, Hunger call'd them off, and ſo, once more, they got all their Company together again; and now they began to load the Float, indeed it might be call'd a Luggage Boat: However, it anſwered very well, and was a great Relief to our Men; but when they came to load it, they found it would not carry ſo much by a great deal as they had to put in it; beſides, that they would be all oblig'd to march on Foot by the Shore, which had this particular Inconvenience in it, That whenever they came to any ſmall River or Brook, which run into the other, as was very often the Caſe, they would be forc'd to march up a great Way to get over it, or unload the great Float to make a Ferry-boat of it to waft them over.

Upon this, they reſolved, that the firſt Place they came at, where Stuff was to be had for building, they would go to work again, and make Two or Three more Floats not ſo big as the other, that ſo they might embark themſelves, and their Stuff, and their Proviſions too all together, and take the full Benefit of the River, where it would afford them Help, and not ſome ſail on the Water, and ſome go on Foot upon the Land, which was very fatigueing.

Upon this, as ſoon as they found Stuff, as I have ſaid, and a convenient Place, they went all Hands to work to build more Floats

or Boats, call them as you will: While this was doing, all the ſpare Men, and all the Men at ſpare Hours, ſpent their Time and Pains in Hunting about for Gold in the Brooks and ſmall Streams, as well thoſe they had been at before, as others; and that after they had, as it were, plundered them at the firſt Diſcovery, for as they had found ſome Gold after the haſty Rain, they were loth to give it over, tho' they had been aſſured there was more to be found in the Lake where they were yet to come, than in the Brooks.

All this while their making the Floats went ſlowly on, for the Men thought it a great Hardſhip to keep chopping of Blocks, as they call'd it, while their Fellows were picking up of Gold, tho' they knew they were to have their Share of what they found, as much as if they had been all the while with them: But, it ſeems, there is a kind of Satisfaction in the Work of picking up Gold, beſides the meer Gain.

However, at Length, the Gold failing, they began to think of their more immediate Work, which was going forward; and the Carpenters having made Three more Floats like flat-bottom'd Barges, which they brought to be able to carry their Baggage and themſelves too, if they thought fit, they began to embark and fall down the River, but they grew ſick of their Navigation in a very few Days; for before they got to the Lake, which was but Three Days going, they run ſeveral Times on Ground, and were oblig'd to lighten them to get them off again, then load again,

and lighten again, and ſo off and on, till they were ſo tired of them; that they would much rather have carried all their Baggage, and have travelled by Land: And at laſt they were forced to caſt off Two of them, and put all their Baggage on Board the other Two; which, at beſt, tho' large, were but very poor crazy Things.

At length, they came in Sight of their beloved Lake, and the next Day they entred into the open Part or Sea of it, which they found was very large, and in ſome Places very deep.

Their Floats, or what they might be call'd, were by no Means fit to carry them upon this Inland Sea; for as, if the Water had been ſtirred by the leaſt Guſt of Wind, it would preſently have waſhed over them, and have ſpoiled, if not ſunk, their Baggage; ſo they had no Way to ſteer or guide them whenever they came into deep Water where they could not reach the Ground with their Poles.

This oblig'd them, as ſoon as they came into the open Lake, to keep cloſe under one Shore, *that is to ſay*, to the Right-hand, where the Land falling away to the *S.* and the *S. and by E.* ſeemed to carry them ſtill forward on their Way; the other Side widening to the *N.* made the Lake ſeem there to be really a Sea, for they could not ſee over it unleſs they went on Shore, and got up upon ſome riſing Ground.

Here, at firſt, they found the Shore ſteep too, and a great Depth of Water cloſe to the Land, which made them very uneaſy; for if

the leaſt Gale of Wind had diſturbed the Water, eſpecially blowing from off the Lake, they would have been ſhipwreck'd cloſe to the Shore. However, after they had gone for Two Days along the Side, by the Help of Towing and Setting as well as they could, they came to a flatter Shore and a fair Strand, to their great Joy and Satisfaction.

But if the Shore prov'd to their Satisfaction for its Safety, it was much more ſo on another Account; for they had not been long here, before they found the Sands or Shore infinitely rich in Gold, beyond all they had ſeen, or thought of ſeeing, before. They had no ſooner made the Diſcovery, but they reſolv'd to fall on, as upon a laſting Spoil that was to inrich them all, and they went to work with ſuch an avaricious Rage, that they ſeemed to be as if they were plundring an Enemy's Camp, and that there was an Army at Hand to drive them from the Place; and, as it prov'd, they were in the right to do ſo; for in this Guſt of their greedy Appetite, they conſidered not where they were, and upon what tender tickliſh Terms their Navigation ſtood. They had indeed drawn their Two Floats to the Shore as well as they could, and with Pieces of Wood, like Piles, ſtuck in on every Side, brought them to ride eaſy, but had not taken the leaſt Thought about Change of Weather, tho' they knew they had neither Anchor or Cable, nor ſo much as a Rope large enough to faſten them on the Shore.

But they were taught more Wit to their Coſt in Two or Three Days; for the very ſecond Night, they felt a little unuſual Riſing of the Water, as they thought, tho' without any Wind; and the next Morning, they found the Water of the Lake was ſwelled about Two Foot perpendicular, and that their Floats, by that Means, lay a great Way farther from the Shore than they did before, the Water ſtill increaſing.

This made them, at firſt, imagine there was a Tide in the Lake, and that after a little Time it would abate again; but they ſoon found their Miſtake; for, after ſome Time, they perceived the Water, which was perfectly fine and clear before, grew, by Degrees, of a paler Colour, thick, and whitiſh, till at laſt it was quite white and muddy, as is uſual in Land Floods; and as it ſtill continued riſing, ſo they continued thruſting in their Floats farther and farther towards the Shore, till they had, in ſhort, loſt all the fine Golden Sands they were upon before, and found the Lake overflowed the Land ſo far beyond them, that, in ſhort, they ſeemed to be in the Middle of the Lake, for they could ſcarce ſee to the End of the Water, even on that very Side where, but a few Hours before, they were faſt on Shore.

You may eaſily judge, that this put them into a great Conſternation, and they might well conclude, that they ſhould be all drowned and loſt; for they were now, as it were, in the Middle of the Sea upon Two open Floats or Rafts, fenc'd no where from the

leaſt

leaſt Surge or Swell of the Water, except by a kind of waſte Board, about Two Foot high, built up on the Sides, without any Caulking or Pitching, or any Thing to keep out the Water.

They had neither Maſt or Sail, Anchor or Cable, Head or Stern, no Bows to fence off the Waves, or Rudder to ſteer any Courſe, or Oars to give any Motion, but, like a flat-bottomed Punt; they thruſt them along with ſuch Poles as they had, ſome of which were about Eight or Ten Foot long, and, which gave them a little Way, but very ſlowly.

All the Remedy they had in this Caſe, was to ſet on with their Poles towards the Shore, and to obſerve by their Pocket Compaſſes which Way it lay: And this they laboured hard at, leſt they ſhould be loſt in the Night, and not know which Way to go.

Their Carpenters, in the mean Time, with ſome ſpare Boards which they had, or rather made, raiſed their Sides as well as they could, to keep off the Waſh of the Sea, if any Wind ſhould riſe ſo as to make the Water rough; and thus they fenced againſt every Danger as well as they could, tho' all put together, they were but in a very ſorry Condition.

Now they had Time to reflect upon their voracious Fury, in ranging the Shore to pick up Gold, without conſidering where, and in what Condition they were, and without looking out on Shore for a Place of Safety: Nay, they might now have reflected on the Madneſs

Madneſs of venturing out into a Lake or Inland Sea of that vaſt Extent, in ſuch pitiful Bottoms as they had under them. Their Buſineſs, doubtleſs, had been to have ſtopp'd within the Mouth of the River, and found a convenient Place to land their Goods and ſecure their Lives; and when they had pitched their Camp upon any ſafe high Ground, where they might be ſure they could neither be overflowed or ſurrounded with Water, they might have ſearch'd the Shores of the Lake as far as they thought fit; But thus to launch out in an unknown Water, and in ſuch a Condition, as to their Veſſels, as is deſcribed above, was moſt unaccountably raſh and inconſiderate.

Never was a Crew of Fifty Men, all able and experienced Sailors ſo embarked, nor drawn into ſuch a Snare; for they were ſurrounded with Water for Three or Four Miles in Breadth on the neareſt Shore, and this all on a ſudden, the Country lying low and flat for ſuch a Breadth; all which appear'd dry Land, and Green, like the Fields, but the Day before; and, without Queſtion, they were ſufficiently ſurprized.

Now they would have given all the Gold they had got, which was very conſiderable too, to have been on Shore on the wildeſt and moſt barren Part of the Country, and would have truſted to their own Diligence to get Food: But here, beſides the imminent Danger of Drowning, they might alſo be in Danger of Starving; for had their Floats grounded but upon any little Hillock, they might

have

have ſtuck there till they had ſtarved and periſhed for Hunger: Then they were in the utmoſt Anxiety too, for fear of wetting their Powder, which if it had happened, they could never have made ſerviceable again, and without it they could not have killed any Thing for Food, if they had got to the Shore.

They had, in this Exigence, ſome Comforts however, which might a little uphold their Spirits; and without which, indeed, their Condition muſt have been deplorable and deſperate. 1. It was hot Weather, ſo that, as they had no Shelter againſt the Cold if it had come, they had no Cold to afflict them; but they rather wanted Aunings, to keep off the Sun, than Houſes to keep off the Cold. 2. The Water of the Lake was all freſh and very good, even when it looked white and thick, yet it was very ſweet and drank wholeſome and good taſted: Had it been ſalt Water, and they thus in the Middle of it, they muſt have periſhed for Thirſt. 3. They being now floating over the drowned Lands only, the Water was not very deep, ſo that they could reach Ground, and ſet along their Rafts with their Poles; and this, to be ſure, they failed not to do with the utmoſt Diligence.

They had alſo the Satisfaction to obſerve, tho' it was not without Toiling in an inexpreſſible Manner, that they did gain upon the Shore; and there was a high Land before them, which they did draw towards, tho' very ſlowly, and at a very great Diſtance.

But then they had another Diſcouragement, namely, that they ſaw the Day declined, and

Night came on apace, and, in ſhort, that it was impoſſible they could reach the high Land, which they ſaw, by Daylight, nor did they know what to do, or how to go on in the Night.

At Length, Two bold Fellows offered themſelves to ſtrip and go off, either to wade or ſwim to the Shore, which they had yet Daylight enough to do, being, as they judged, about Three Miles, tho' they found it above Four Miles; and from thence to find Means to make a Fire or Light, to guide them to the Shore in the Dark.

This was, indeed, a deſperate Attempt, but the Two Fellows being good Swimmers, and willing to venture, it was not impracticable. They had light Linnen Drawers on, open at the Knees, and their Shirts; and they took a little Bottle each in their Pockets, with ſome Gun-powder in them cloſe ſtopped, with other Materials for kindling Fire; Weapons they had none, but each Man a Knife and a Hatchet faſten'd round their Waſte in a little Belt, and a light Pole in their Hands to help when they waded, which they expected to do moſt Part of the Way. They had no Proviſions with them, but a Bottle with ſome good Brandy in their Pockets.

When they went off, you are to ſuppoſe the Water about Four Foot to Five Foot deep, ſo they choſe to ſwim rather than wade, and, as it was very ſeldom much deeper, they had often Opportunity to ſtand on the firm Ground to reſt themſelves.

In this Poſture they went on directly towards the Land, and after they had by ſwimming

ming and wading together, advanced about a Mile, they found the Water grew ſhallower, which was a Signal to them that they ſhould reach the hard Ground in a little Time; ſo they walked chearfully on in about Three Foot Water for near a Mile more.

Their Companions ſoon loſt Sight of them, for they being in White, and the Water white too, and the Light declining, they could not ſee them at a Mile's Diſtance; after this, they found the Ground falling lower, ſo that they had deeper Water, for Half a Mile more all the Way; after which, they came to flat Ground again for near Two Miles more, and at length to the dry Land, to their great Satisfaction, tho' it was then quite Night.

Their Comrades had been near an Hour in the Dark, that is to ſay, with only a dusky Light, and began to be greatly at a Loſs, not being able to ſee the Compaſs; they had made ſhift to get over the Half-Mile of deeper Water pretty well; for tho' it was too deep for the Men to wade, as above, yet they could reach the Bottom with their Poles, and at that Time they happened to feel a little Breeze of Wind fair in their Way, which both refreſhed them with its cool Breath, and alſo gave them a Kind of a Jog on their Way towards the Shore.

At Length, to their great Joy, they ſaw a Light; and it was the more to their Joy, becauſe they ſaw it juſt before them, or, as the Seamen call it, Right a Head; by which they had the Satisfaction to know they had not varied their Courſe in the Dark. It ſeems their

their Two Men had landed upon a fair riſing Ground, where they found ſome low Buſhes and Trees, and where they had good hard dry Standing; and they ſoon found Means to pick out a few withered dry Sticks, with which they made a Blaze for the preſent, having ſtruck Fire with the Tools they were furniſhed with, as above.

By the Light of this Blaze, they gave the firſt Notice to their Comrades, as above, that they were landed; and they again, as was agreed before Hand, fired Two Guns as a Signal that they ſaw it, and were all ſafe; alſo, by the Light of this Fire, they gave themſelves ſo much Light as to find more dry Wood; and afterwards their Fire was ſo ſtrong and good, that they made the green Wood burn as well as the dry.

Their Companions were now come into the ſhoal Water, in which, as I ſaid, the Men waded, but as their Floats did not draw above a Foot or Eighteen Inches Water at moſt, they went on ſtill; but at length, being within about Half a Mile of the Hillock, where the Two Men were, they found the Water ſo ſhallow, that their Floats would not ſwim. Upon this, more of the Men went over-board with Poles in their Hands, ſounding, as we may call it, for deeper Water; and, with long Puddling about, they found the Ground fall off a little in One Place, by which they got their Floats about a Quarter of a Mile farther: But then the Water was ſhallow again not above a Foot Water. So, in a Word, they were fain to be content, and running

running faſt a-Ground, they immediately began, tho' dark, and themſelves very much fatigued, to unload their Ships; and carry all on Shore on their Backs.

The firſt Thing they took Care to land, was their Ammunition, their Gun-powder and Arms; not forgetting the *Ammunition de Bouche*, as the *French* call it, I mean their Victuals; and, with great Joy, they got to their Two Comrades; then they fetched their proper Materials for their Tent, and ſet it up, and having refreſhed themſelves, they went all to ſleep (as they ſaid) without ſo much as a Centinel placed for their Guard: For as they ſaw no Inhabitants, ſo they feared no Enemies; and, it may be ſuppoſed they were weary enough to make them want Reſt, even in the extreameſt Manner.

In the Morning they had Time enough to reflect upon the Madneſs of ſuch raſh Adventures, as you ſhall hear: Their Floats, indeed, remained as they had left them, and the Water was ebbed away from them above Two Miles, that is to ſay, almoſt to the deep Half-Mile, mentioned above; but they heard a ſurprizing Noiſe and Roaring of the Water on the Lake itſelf, the Body of which was now above Seven Miles from them.

They could not imagine what this Roaring ſhould mean, for they felt no Wind, nor could they perceive any Clouds at a Diſtance that looked as if they brought any Squawls of Wind with them, as they are often obſerved to do: But when they came nearer the Water, they found it had a Kind

of

of a Swell, and that there was certainly ſome more violent Motion at the farther Diſtance; and in a little while, looking behind them towards the Shore where their Comrades were, they found the Water began to ſpread over the flat Ground again; upon which, they haſten'd back, but having a good Way to go, they were obliged to go Knee-deep, before they reached to the Hillock where their Tent ſtood.

They had not been many Hours on Shore, before they found the Wind began to riſe, and the Roaring, which before they heard at a Diſtance, grew louder and nearer, till at length the Floats were lifted up, and driven on Shore, by the Wind, which increaſed to a Storm; and the Water ſwelled and grew rough, and, as they were upon the Lee-Shore, the Floats were ſoon broken in Pieces, and went ſome one Way and ſome another.

In the Evening, it overcaſt and grew cloudy, and about Midnight they had their Share of a violent Rain, which yet, they could ſee, was more violent towards the Mountains of the *Andes*, and towards the Courſe of the River, which they came down in the Floats.

The Conſequence of this, was naturally, that, the Third Day, the Waters of the Lake ſwelled again to a frightful Height, that is to ſay, it would have been frightful to them, if they had been upon it, for they ſuppoſe it roſe about Two Fathom perpendicular, and the Wind continuing freſh, the Water was all a white Foam of Froth; ſo, that had they had a

good large Boat under them, ſhe would ſcarce have lived there.

Their Tent kept them dry, and as they were on dry Land, and too high to be reached by any Inundation, they had no Concern upon them about their Safety: But, to be ſure, took this for ſufficient Notice, not to come up the Lake again in Haſte, unleſs they were better provided with Boats to ride out a Storm.

Our Men began now to think they had taken their Leave of the Golden Lake, and yet they knew not how to think of leaving it ſo ſoon: They were now Fourteen or Fifteen Leagues off of that fine Golden Shore where they took up ſo much, nor did they know the Way to it by Land; and as for going by Water, that they were unprovided for, ſeveral Ways; beſides, the Waters kept up to a conſiderable Height, and the Winds blew freſh for Six or Eight Days together.

All theſe Obſtrctuions joyn'd together, put them upon conſidering of perſuing their March by Land; in which, however, they reſolved to coaſt the Lake as near as they could to the Eaſtward, till, if poſſible, they ſhould find that the Waters had ſome Outlet, that is to ſay, that the Lake emptied itſelf by ſome River towards the Sea, as they concluded it certainly muſt.

They had not yet ſeen any Inhabitants, or any Sign of them, at leaſt, not near them; they did, or 'tis thought they fancied they did, ſee ſome on the other Side of the River, but they would not come within Reach of them

them on any Account; so that 'tis doubtful whether they really saw them or no.

Before they decamped for a March, it was needful to get some Provisions, if possible, and this made them the more desirous of finding out some conversible Creatures, but it was in vain: They killed a wild Cow and a Deer, and this was all they could get for some Time; and with this they set forward, taking their Course East, and rather Northerly, in order to come into the same Latitude they set out in, at their first embarking on the River.

After they had marched thus for about Three Days, keeping the Lake on the North Side of them, and always in View; at length, on the third Day in the Evening, coming to a little Hill, which gave them the Prospect of the Country for some Length *N. E.* they saw plainly a River issuing out of the Lake, and running first East, then bending to the South, it was also easy to perceive, that this River was at that Time much broader than in its usual Course, for that they could see a great many Trees, which probably grew on the Bank of the River, standing, as it were, in the Middle of the Water, the Banks being overflowed both Ways very considerably.

But as they mounted the Hill, which they stood on, to a greater Height, they discover'd farther North, at the Distance of Five or Six Miles, according to their Account, a much larger River, which looked, compared to the first River, rather like a Sea than a River, which likewise issued out of the Lake and run *E.* by *S.* towards the Sea; which River they sup-

poſed to be in the ſame Manner ſwelled with a Land-Water, or Freſh, as the Lake was, to a prodigious Degree.

This Proſpect brought them to a more ſerious Conſultation, as to the Meaſures they ſhould take to proceed on their Journey; and, as they could eaſily ſee, there was little or no Uſe to be made of the Rivers for their Travelling, while the Water was thus above the ordinary Banks, ſo that they could not know the proper Channels, and alſo that the Currents were exceeding ſwift; ſo they reſolved to ſtock themſelves with Proviſions, if poſſible, and continue their Journey by Land.

To this Purpoſe, they firſt made it their Buſineſs to catch ſome more *Guinacos*, or large Sheep, which they knew, would not only feed them, but alſo carry their Luggage, which was ſtill heavy and very troubleſome to them, and yet abſolutely neceſſary too: But all their Endeavour was in vain, for tho' they ſaw ſeveral, and found that the Country was pretty full of them, and ſome they killed, yet they could not take One alive, (which was the Thing they chiefly wanted) by any Means that they could contrive.

Among the reſt of the Creatures they ſhot for Food, they very often found wild Cows and Bulls, and eſpecially, as they found afterwards, on the North Side of the River; but the moſt ſurprizing Thing to them that they had yet met with, was ſtill to come: They had deſcended from the Hill, where they at firſt diſcover'd the ſmaller River, and where they had ſet up their Tent,

resolving to march on the lower Grounds, as near the River as they could, so as to be out of Danger of the Water, that they might find, if possible, some Way over to come at the great River, which they judg'd to be the Stream most proper for their Business.

Here they found a rich pleasant Country, level and fruitful, not so low as to be exposed to the overflowing of the River, and not so high as to be dry and barren; several little Brooks and Streams of Water, rising on the Side of the Hill they came from, ran winding this Way and that, as if to find out the River, and near the River were some Woods of very large Trees.

The Men, not forgetting the main Chance, fell to washing and searching the Sand and Gravel in these Brooks for Gold; but the Harvest of Gold seemed to be over, for here they found none. They had also an Occasion to discover, that till the Land-Waters were abated, there was no stirring for them, no, not so much as to cross the first River; nor, if they did, could they find in their Hearts to venture, not knowing, but the Waters might still rise higher, and that the Two Rivers might swell into One, and so they should be swallowed up, or if not, they might be surrounded in some Island, where they should perish for want of Provisions; so they resolved to fetch their Baggage from the Hill, as well as they could, and encamp in those pleasant Plains, as near the River as they could, till the Water should abate.

While they ſtay'd here, they were ſo far from having Hopes that the Waters would abate, that it rained violently for almoſt Three Days and Nights together; and one of thoſe rainy Mornings, looking out at their Tent-Door, (for they could not ſtir abroad for the Rain) they were ſurprized, when looking towards the River, which was juſt below them, they ſaw a prodigious Number of black Creatures in the Water, and ſwimming towards the Shore where they were.

They firſt imagined they were Porpuſſes, but could not ſuggeſt any Thing of that Kind at ſuch a Diſtance from the Sea, when one of the Men, looking at them through a Glaſs, cried out, they were all black Cattle, and that he could perceive their Horns and their Heads; upon this, others looking with their Glaſſes alſo, ſaid the ſame; immediately, every Man run to his Gun, and, notwithſtanding it rained hard, away they march'd down to the River's Side with all the Speed they could make.

By that Time they reach'd the River-Bank, their Wonder incraſed, for they found it was a vaſt Multitude of black Cattle, who finding the Waters riſe between the Two Rivers, and, by a natural Sagacity, apprehenſive of being ſwept away with the Flood, had, One and All, took the Waters, and were ſwimming over to this Side for Safety.

You may very well ſuppoſe, the Fellows, tho' they wanted a few ſuch Gueſts as theſe, yet were terrified with their Multitude, and began to conſider what Courſe to take when

the

the Creatures ſhould come to land, for there was a monſtrous many of them: Upon the whole, after a ſhort Conſultation, for the Creatures came on apace, they reſolved to get into a low Ground, where, they perceived, they directed their Courſe, and, in which, there were a great many Trees, and that they would all get up into the Trees, and ſo lie ready to ſhoot among them as they landed.

Accordingly they did ſo, except that Five of them, cutting down ſome large Boughs of a Tree, got into a little Thicket cloſe to the Water, which they ſo fortified with the Boughs of the Trees, that they thought themſelves ſecure within, and there they poſted themſelves, reſolving to expect them and take their Hazard.

When the Creatures came to land, it was wonderful to obſerve, how they lowed and roared, as it were, to bid one another welcome on Shore, and ſpreading themſelves upon the neighbouring Plain, immediately lay down, and rowling and ſtretching themſelves, gave our People Notice, that, in ſhort, they had ſwam a great Way, and were very much tired.

Our Fellows, you may ſuppoſe, laid about them, and the Five Men that fixed themſelves in the Thicket, had the faireſt Opportunity, for they killed Eleven or Twelve of them as ſoon as they ſet their Foot on Shore, and lamed as many.

And now they had a Tryal of Skill, for as they kill'd as many as they knew what to do with, and had their Choice of Beef, if they kill'd a Bull, they let him lie, as having no Use for him, but chose the Cows, as what they thought was only fit for Eating.

But, I say, now they had a Tryal of Skill, namely, to see if they could maim some of them, so as not to kill them, and might bring them to carry their Luggage: This was a Kind of a fruitless Attempt, as we afterwards told them, to make a Baggage-Horse of a wild Bull.

However, they brought it so far to pass, that having wounded several young Bulls very much, after they had run roaring about with the Hurt, they lay down and bled so, as, that it was likely, they would bleed to Death, as several of them really did; but the Surgeon observing Two of them to be low enough that he might go to them, and do what he would with them, he soon stopped the Bleeding, and, in a Word, healed the Wounds; all the while he was doing this, he caused Food, that is to say, Grass and Boughs of Trees to be brought to them for Food, and in Four or Five Days, the Creatures were very well: Then he caused them to be hamper'd with Ropes and tied together, so that they could neither fight with their Heads or run away with their Heels; and having thus brought them to a Place just by their Tent, he caused them to be kept so hungry, and almost starved, that when Meat was carried them, they were so tame and thankful, that,

at

at laſt, they would eat out of his Hand, an ſtretch out their Heads for it, and when they were let a little looſer, would follow him about for a Handful of Graſs, like a Dog for a Bone.

When he had brought them thus to Hand, he, by Degrees, loaded them, and, taught them to carry; and if they were unruly as they were at firſt, he would load them with more than they could well carry, and make them ſtand under that Load Two or Three Hours, and then come himſelf and bring them Meat, and take the Load off; and thus in a few Days, they knew him ſo well, that they would let him do any thing with them.

When they came to decamp, they tied them both together, with ſuch Ropes as they had, and made them carry a very great Weight. They tried the ſame Experiment with Two more, but they failed, one died, and the other prov'd untractable, ſullen and outragious.

They had now lain here Twelve Days, having Plenty of Proviſion, in which Time the Weather proving fair, the Land-Waters run off and the Rivers came to their old Channels, clear and calm: The Men would gladly have gone back to the Sands and flat Shore of the Lake, or to ſome other Part to look for Gold; but that was impracticable now, ſo they march'd on, and in about Two Days, they found the firſt River ſeemed to turn ſo much to the *South*, that they thought it would carry them too far out of their Way, for their Orders were to keep about the Latitude of Forty to Fifty

Fifty Degrees, as is ſaid before, ſo they reſolved to get over the firſt River as ſoon as they could; they had not gone far, but they found the River ſo ſhallow, that they eaſily forded it, Bulls and all, and being ſafely landed, they travelled croſs the Country directly to the great River, which they found alſo very low, tho' not like to be forded as the other was.

Now, they thought, they were in the Way of their Buſineſs, and here they reſolved to ſee if a Tree or Two might be found, big enough, to make a large Canoe to carry them down this River, which, as it ſeemed large, ſo the Current ſeemed to be leſs rapid and furous, the Channel being deep and full.

They had not ſearched long, but they found Three Trees, as they thought, large enough, and they immediately went to work with them, fell'd them, and ſhap'd them, and in Four Days Time, they had Three handſome Canoes; one larger then the reſt, and able to carry, in all, Fifteen or Sixteen Men; but this was not enough, ſo they were forced to look out farther for Two Trees more, and this took them up more Time. However, in about a Week they launched them all: As for Days, they had loſt their Account of Time; ſo that as they had, ſometimes, no Room to diſtinguiſh one Day from another, ſo they, after ſome Time, quite forgot the Days, and knew not a Sunday from a Working-Day any more.

While theſe Canoes were making, the Men, according to the old Trade, fell to rummaging the Shores of this River, as they had

done the other, for Gold, nor did they wholly lose their Labour, for in several Places they found a pretty deal; and here it was, that a certain Number of them, taking one of the Canoes that were first made, took a Voyage of their own Heads, not only without Command, but against Command; and having made a little Mast and Sail to it, went up towards the Lake, resolving to go quite into the Lake, to find another Golden Shore or *Gold-Coast*, as they call'd it.

To give a particular Account of this wild Undertaking, would be too long, nor would the Rogues give much Account of it themselves; only, in short, that they found a Sand pretty rich in Gold, work'd upon it Five Days, indefatigably, and got a good deal, sufficient, had they brought it back, to have tempted the rest to have gone all away to the same Place: But at the End of Five Days, some were for returning, and others for staying longer, till the Majority prevailed to come back, representing to the rest, that their Friends would be gone, and they should be left to starve in that wild Country, and should never get home; so they all got into the Canoe again, but quarrelled when they were in, and that, to such an unreasonable Height, that, in short, they fought, over-set the Boat, lost all their Gold and their Arms, except three Muskets which were lashed under the Thouts or Benches of the Canoe, spoiled their Ammunition and Provision, and drowned one of their Company; so they came home to the

rest

reſt by weeping Croſs, wet and almoſt famiſhed.

This was a Balk to them, you may be ſure, and put a Damp to their new Projects; and yet, Six of the ſame Men were ſo bold afterwards, as to demand to be diſmiſs'd, and a Canoe given them, and they would go back, they ſaid, to the Golden Lake, where, they did not doubt, they ſhould load the Canoe with Gold; and if they found, when they came back, we were gone, they would find their Way back thro' the Mountains, and go to the rich *Spaniard*, who, they did not doubt, would get them Licenſe to go back to *Europe* with the Galleons, and, perhaps, they ſaid, they might be in *England* before us.

But the Captain quelled this Mutiny, tho' there were Four or Five more come into it, and ſhewing them the Agreement they had made with me, their Commander; the Obligation they were under, and the Madneſs of their other Propoſal, prevailed with them to go forward with the reſt, and purſue the Voyage, which he now repreſented to be very eaſy, being, *as it were*, all the Way down Hill, that is to ſay, with the Stream; for they all knew the River they were in muſt go to the Sea, and that, in or near, the Latitude which they knew the Ship had appointed to wait for them. However, to ſoften them a little, and, in ſome Meaſure, to pleaſe them, he promiſed, that, if they met with any Succeſs in the Search after Gold, in the River they were in, as he did not queſtion but they ſhould, he would conſent to any reaſonable Stop that they

they ſhould propoſe, not exceeding Five Days in a Place, and the Places to be not leſs than Five Leagues off from one another.

Upon theſe Terms they conſented, and all embarked and came away, tho' extreamly mortified for the loſs of one of their Companions, who was a brave ſtout Fellow, very well beloved by all the Company, but there was no Remedy; ſo they came on in Five Canoes, and with a good Stock of Proviſions, ſuch as it was, (*viz.*) good freſh Beef cured in the Sun, and Fifteen *Peruvian* Sheep alive, for when they got into the Country, between the Two Rivers, they found it eaſy to catch thoſe Creatures, who, before that, would not come near them.

And now they came down the River apace, till they came to another Golden Shore, where, finding ſome Quantity of Gold, they claim'd their Captain's Promiſe, and accordingly, they went all on Shore to work, and pretty good Succeſs they had, picking up, from among the Sands, a conſiderable Quantity of Gold; and having ſtay'd Four of the Five Days, they found they had cleared the Place, which was not of a long Extent, and ſo they chearfully came on.

They came on now for Eleven Days together very willingly, but then found the Channel of the River divided itſelf, and one went away to the left, and the other to the right; they could not judge which was the beſt to take; but not queſtioning, but that they would meet again ſoon, they took the Southmoſt Channel, as being moſt direct in their

Latitude; and thus they proceeded for Three or Four Days more, when they were oblig'd to put into the Mouth of a little River, that fell into the other, and made a good Harbour for their little Fleet.

Here, I ſay, they were obliged to put in for want of Proviſions, for they had eat up all their *Guinacoes*, and their Two tame Bulls too, the laſt of which, they ſoon repented, as you will ſee preſently.

After they had been a Hunting, and ſhot a couple of Deer and a Cow, with a Kind of a Hare, as big as an *Engliſh* Fox, they ſet forward again very merry, and the more, becauſe they had another little Piece of a Gold Coaſt, where, for Two Days, they had very good Luck again; but judge how they were ſurprized, and in what a Conſternation they were, when coming down farther the ſame River, they heard a terrible Noiſe in the River, as of a mighty Cataract, or Water-fall, which increaſed as they came forward, till it grew ſo loud, that they could not hear themſelves ſpeak, much leſs hear one another.

As they approached, it was the more frightful; ſo at length, leſt they ſhould be hurried into it before they were aware, they went all on Shore, doing all by Signs and dumb Poſtures, for it was impoſſible to hear any Sound.

Notwithſtanding this, it was near Six Miles to the Place, which, when they perceived, ſome of them went back to bring on the Boats, and ſo brought them as near the Place as they durſt; and run them on Shore into a

little

little hollow Part of the Bank, juſt big enough to hold them: When they had thus ſecured the Boats, they went to view the Water-fall; but, how was they aſtoniſhed? when they found, that there were not One, but Five Wa-falls, at the Diſtance of about Two Miles from one another, ſome more, ſome leſs, that the Water fell a prodigious Height; ſo that it was impoſſible any Boat could bear to launch down the Cataract and not be daſhed in Pieces.

They now ſaw there was no Remedy, but that they muſt loſe the Benefit of their Five Canoes, which had been ſo comfortable to them, and by which, they had come above Four Hundred Miles in a little Time, with Safety and Pleaſure.

Theſe Cataracts made the River perfectly uſeleſs to them for above Twenty Miles, and it was impoſſible to drag their Canoes that Length over Land; ſo in ſhort, they unloaded them, and for their own Satisfaction, they turned one, the biggeſt, of them a-drift, and let it go to the firſt Cataract, placing themſelves ſo beyond, that they might ſee it come down, which they did, and had the Pleaſure of ſeeing it daſhed in Pieces on the Rocks below.

Well, there was no Remedy, but they muſt leave their Boats behind them; and now, as I have ſaid, they had Time to repent killing their Two tame Bulls, who would have done them good Service; but it was too late to look back upon what was done and over, ſo many Days before; they had now no Remedy,

dy, if they would go forward, but to take up their Baggage upon their Shoulders, and walk on Foot; the only Help they had, was, that they had gotten Five *Guinacoes* more, which, tho' they were hungry, and would fain have eaten, yet, as they carried, at least, Five Hundred Weight of their Luggage, they chose to fast and walk, rather than feast and work; so they went on as well as they could, till they got past these Falls, which, tho' not above Twenty Miles, cost them Five Days Labour.

Then they encamped again to refresh themselves, and consider of what was next to be done: They were thus long upon this short Journey for many Reasons.

1. Because they were obliged to employ the best Part of Two Days in Hunting for their Food, in which Time, Five of them swimming over the River to shoot at some black Cattle, extreamly fatigued themselves in pursuing them, but did, however, shoot Five Cows and Bulls; but then it was at such a Distance, that it was more Pains to drag the Flesh along to the River's Side, than it was worth to have it, only, that they were, indeed hunger-starved, and must have it.

2. They found still some little Quantity of Gold in the Water, that is to say, below the Falls, where the Water, after, by falling with such Force, it had made a Pit or Hole of a vast Depth, as is usual at a Mill-Tail, had thrown up a Shoal again, at, perhaps, a Mile Distance, there they took up some Gold,

whenever

whenever the Water was low enough to come to the Shoal.

3. The Weight of their Baggage made them travel heavy, and ſeldom above Five or Six Miles a Day.

Being now come to the open River, they thought of building more Floats, but they were diſcouraged from this Conſideration; That they did not know, but in few Days March, there might be more Water-falls, and then all their Labour would be loſt; ſo they took up their Tent, and began to travel again.

But here, as they kept the River cloſe on Board, as the Seamen call it, they were at a full Stop, by the coming in of another River from the *S. W.* which, when it joined, the River they went along by, was above a Quarter of a Mile broad, and how to get over it they knew not; they ſent Two Men up the additional River ſome Length, and he brought Word, that it was, indeed, narrower by much, but no where fordable, but deep and rapid.

At the ſame Time, they ſent Two more nimble Fellows down the Coaſt of the great River, to ſee if there were no more Water-falls, who brought them Word, there were none for Sixty Miles.

While they lay here, at the Point of the Influx, expecting the Return of their Scouts, they uſed what Diligence they could in getting Proviſions; and among the reſt, they killed Three Cows and a Bull on the other Side of the biggeſt River; but not knowing how to bring them over, they concluded to go over, as

many as could ſwim, which was the better Half of them, and ſit down by it, and roaſt and broil upon the Spot, as much as they could eat, and then bring over as much as they could for their Fellows.

They got Boughs of Trees, and bound them together, then wrapt the Meat in the Hides, and laid it on the Wood, and made a Hundred little Contrivances to get it over; ſo that on one Side or other, they got all the Meat eaten or brought over: what they got on their own Side the River, they made better ſhift with,

On the Return of their Scouts, they found there was no Remedy, but to build ſome new Veſſels of one Kind or another, to take in their Baggage and Proviſion which they did, after the Manner of their firſt Floats; for they found no Trees big enough to make Canoes; when therefore, they had made one great Float, they reſolved to make Two ſmall Boats like Yauls or Skiffs, with which they might tow their large Float or Barge; and as this they might do with ſmall Stuff, ſo they found Means to line them within and without with the Bulls Hides, and that, ſo dextrouſly joined, and lapped or rolled one over another, that no Water came thro', or but very little.

With theſe Two Boats they ferried over the ſmall Rivers with Eaſe, each Boat carrying Six Men, beſides Two to row; and when they were over the ſmall Rivers, the Two Boats ſerved to tow their great Punt or Barge cloſe by the Shore.

The

The greateſt Difficulty was for Tow-Lines to draw the Boats by, and that they ſuppli-ed, by twiſting a ſtrong tough Kind of Flag or Ruſh, which they found in the River, of which, with great Application, they made a Kind of Rope-yarn, and then twiſting it again, made it very ſtrong.

This was the Voiture with which they car-ried themſelves down quite to the Sea, and one of theſe Boats it was, that we ſpyed, *as above*, coming to us in the Bay.

They had yet above Four Hundred and Fifty Miles to the Sea, nor could they at any Time tell or gueſs how far off it might be. They went on more or leſs every Day, but 'twas but ſlowly, and not without great Labour, both of Rowing and Towing: Their Provi-ſions alſo coſt them much Labour, and it was a great deal of Difficulty, that they were obliged, firſt to hunt and kill it, and then to bring it to the Camp, which was always cloſe to the River's Side.

After they had travelled thus ſome Time, following the Courſe of the River, behold they came to a Place, where, of a ſudden, they could ſee no farther Bank of the River, but it looked all Water like the Sea; they could not imagine what it muſt be, ſo, the next Day, they rowed towards it with one of their little Boats, when they were ſurprized, to find that it was the Northern Branch of the River, which they had ſeen go off before they came at the Water-falls, which River being now increaſed with many other great Waters, was now ſo great, that the Mouth of it might

be ſaid to be, Four or Five Miles over, and rather received this River, which they were on, into it, than ran into this; but after this, it contracted itſelf again, tho' ſtill it was to be ſuppoſed near a Mile and Half over.

They were not glad of this Conjunction of the Waters at all, becauſe the great Water being thus joined, they found the Stream, or Current, more violent, and the Water, upon the leaſt Stirring of the Wind, much more turbulent than it was before; and, as their great Float drew but little Water, and ſwam flat upon the Surface, ſhe was ready to founder upon every Occaſion: This obliged them, almoſt every Night, to ſeek for ſome little Cove or Creek to run her into, as into a Harbour to preſerve her; for if the Wind blew off Shore, they had enough to do to keep her from driving off, if it blew off from the River, tho' it were, otherwiſe, little Wind enough, yet it made a Rippling or Chopping of the Waves, that they had much Difficulty to keep it from filling her.

All the Country, on the Side of this River, was a little higher Ground than ordinary, which was its Security from Land-Floods, and their Security too; for ſometimes the River was ſeen to riſe, and that ſo as to overflow a great Extent of Land on the other Side. Hence, perhaps, the other Side might be eſteemed the moſt fruitful, and, perhaps, might be the better Land, if it had but Half of the Art and Induſtry of an *European* Nation to aſſiſt the natural Fertility of the Soil, by keeping the Water in its Bounds, banking and

fencing

fencing the Meadows from the Inundations, and Freſhes, which were frequently ſent down from the *Andes*, and from the Country adjoining.

But as it now was, thoſe Lower Lands lay, great Part of the Year, under Water; whether it was the better or the worſe for the Soil, that no Judgment can be made of, till ſome People come to ſettle there, to whom it ſhall be worth while to make Experiments of that Kind.

This Part of the Country, they were now in, reſembled, as they hinted, the County of *Dorſetſhire*, and the Downs about *Salisbury*, only, not lying ſo high from the Surface of the Water, and the Soil being a good fruitful dark Mould, not a chalky ſolid Rock, as in the County about *Salisbury*, &c.

Here they found a greater Quantity of Deer than they had ſeen in all their Journey, which they often had the good Luck to kill for their Supply of Food, the Creatures not being ſo ſhy and wild, as they had found farther within the Country.

It may be noted here, and 'tis very obſervable, that in all this Journey, I do not learn, that they ſaw either Wolf or Fox, Bear or Lyon, or, indeed, any other ravenous Creature, which they had the leaſt Reaſon to be ſhy or afraid of, or which, indeed, were frightful to the Deer; and this, perhaps, may be the Reaſon, why the Number of thoſe Creatures is ſo great, which, as I have ſaid, is greater there than at other Places.

After they had feafted themfelves here, as above, for fome Days, they refolved to begin their New Kind of Navigation, and fee what they could make of it; but they went very heavily along, and every now and then, *as I have faid above*, the Water was too rough for them, and they were fain to put into Harbour, and fometimes lie Two or Three Days: However, they plyed their Time as well as they could, and fometimes the Current fetting over to their Side, and running ftrong by the Shore, they would go at a great Rate, infomuch, that one Time, they faid, they went above Thirty Miles in a Day, having, befides the Current, a little Gale of Wind right a Stern.

They reckoned, that they went near Two Hundred Miles in this Manner, for they made the beft of it; and at the End of this Two Hundred Miles, it was, by their Reckoning, that our Five Men, who travelled into the Country fo far, found them, when they faw the Hat fwimming down the Stream; which Hat, it feems, one of them let fall overboard in the Night.

They had, I fay, travelled thus far with great Difficulty, the River being fo large; But, as they obferved it growing larger and larger, the farther they went, fo, they faid, they did not doubt, but that, in a little more, they fhould come to the Sea.

They alfo obferved, that now, as they found the Waters larger, and the Rivers wider, they killed more Fowls than formerly, and particularly, more of the Duck-foot Kind,

Kind, tho' they could not perceive any Sea-Fowls, or ſuch as they had been uſed to. They ſaw a great many wild Swans, and ſome Geeſe, as alſo Duck, and Mallard, and Teal; and theſe, I ſay, increaſed as they drew nearer the Sea.

They could give very little Account of the Fiſh which the Rivers produced, tho' they ſometimes catched a few in the ſmaller River; but, as they had neither Fiſhing-hook or Nets, which was the only Omiſſion, in my fitting them out, they had no Opportunity to furniſh themſelves.

They had, likewiſe, no Salt, neither was it poſſible to furniſh them with Salt, ſo they cured their Meat in the Sun, and ſeaſoned it with that excellent Sauce called Hunger.

The Account they gave, of diſcovering our Five Men, was thus, in ſhort; They had been for Two Days, pretty ſucceſsful in their Navigation, as I have deſcribed it; but were obliged to ſtop, and put in at the Mouth of a little River, which made them a good Harbour; the Reaſon of their Stay was, they had no Victuals, ſo by conſent, they all went a hunting, and at Night, having ſhot Two *Guinacoes* and a Deer, they came to Supper together in their great Tent; and having fed heartily, you may ſuppoſe, on ſuch good Proviſions, they began to be merry, and the Captain and Officers, having a little Store left, tho' not much, they pulled out their Bottles, and drank every one a Dram to their

good Voyage, and to the merry Meeting of their Ships, and gave every Man a Sup.

But their Mirth was increaſed beyond expreſſing, when Two of the Men, who were without the Tent-Door, cried out, it lightened; one ſaid, he ſaw the Flaſh, he was ſure, and the other ſaid, he thought he ſaw it too; but, as it happened, their Backs were towards the *E.* ſo that they did not ſee the Occaſion.

This Lightning was certainly the firſt Flaſh of one of our Five Mens Rockets, or the Breaking of it, and the Stars that were at the End of it, up in the Air.

When the Captain heard the Men ſay it light'ned, he jumped off of his Seat, and called aloud to them, to tell which Way; but they fooliſhly replied, to the *N. W.* which was the Way their Faces were, when they ſaw it; but the Word was no ſooner ſpoken, but the Two Fellows, fell a Hollowing and Roaring, as if they were diſtracted, and ſaid, they ſaw a Rocket riſe up in the Air to the *Eaſtward.*

So nimble were the Men, at this Word, that they were all out of the Tent in a Moment, and ſaw the laſt Bounce or Flaſh of the Rocket with the Stars, which ſpreading themſelves in the Air, ſhone with the uſual bright Light, that 'tis known thoſe Things give.

This made them all ſet up a Shout of Joy, as if they imagined their Fellows, who were yet many Miles from them, ſhould hear them; but the Captain and Officers, who knew what they were to do on this Occaſion, ran to their

Bag-

Baggage, and took out their own Rockets and other Materials, and prepared to anſwer the Signal.

They were on a low Ground, but at leſs than a Mile's Diſtance, the Land went aſcending up to a round Crown or Knowl pretty high; away they ran thither, and ſet up a Frame in an inſtant: But, as they were making theſe Preparations, behold, to confirm their News, they ſaw a Third Rocket riſe up in the Air, in the ſame Place as before.

It was near an Hour from the firſt Flaſh, as they called it, before they could get all Things ready; but then they fired Two Rockets from the adjoining Hill, ſoon after one another, and after that, at about Ten Minutes Diſtance of Time, a third, which was juſt as by Agreement, and was perfectly underſtood, the Rockets performing very well.

Upon this, they ſaw another ſingle Rocket riſe up, which was to let them know, that their former was ſeen and underſtood.

This was, you will conclude, a very joyful Night; and the next Morning, they went all Hands to work at the Boats, getting out of the Creek early, and made the beſt of their Way; however, with all they could do, they could not go above Twelve Miles that Day, for, the Current ſetting over to the other Shore, had left them, and in ſome Places, they would rather have an eddy Stream againſt them; and this diſcouraged them a little, but depending that they were near their Port, and that their Friends were

not far off, they were very chearful. At Night they looked out again for Rockets, which failed not to rejoyce their Hearts again; and, with this Addition, that it appeared, their Friends were not above Four or Five Miles off; they anſwered the Rockets punctually, and proceeding early the next Day, they met in the Morning, joyfully enough, as has been ſaid.

We were overjoyed at meeting, you may be ſure; but to ſee the pitiful Boat, or *Periagua*, they came on Board in, a little ſurprized us, for, indeed, it was a Wonder they ſhould be able to make it ſwim under them, eſpecially when they came out into the open Sea.

As ſoon as we had the Boat on Board, we hal'd it up into the Ship for a Relick, and taking Two of the Men with us, we Mann'd out all our Ships Boats to go and fetch the reſt, for they were, as theſe Men told us, about Seventeen Miles up the River ſtill, and could not come any farther, their Boats being not able to bring them along, and the River growing very broad and dangerous. The Eldeſt of my Midſhipmen came in this Firſt Boat, but the Captain and the other ſtaid with the Men, who were very unruly, and ever and anon quarrelling and wrangling about their Wealth, which, indeed, was very conſiderable; but they were above twice as far up the River as the Men told us, having halted after the Boat left them.

When our Boats came to them, and took them in, I ordered they ſhould be ſet on Shore, and their Tents put up on the Shore, 'till

'till I had settled Matters a little with them, having had an Account how Mutinous and Fractious they had been; and I made them all stay there 'till I had fully adjusted every thing with them about their Treasure, which, indeed, was so much, that they scarce knew how to govern themselves under the Thought of it.

Here I proposed Conditions to them at first, That all the Gold should be shared before they went on Board, and that it should be put on Board the Ship, as Goods for every Man's single Account; that I would give them Bills of Lading for it, and I offered to swear to them, to deliver it into every Man's Possession, separately, at the First Port we should come to an Anchor at in *England*, or *France*; and that, at that said Port, they should every Man have the One hundred Pounds I had promised them, as above, for the undertaking this Journey, delivered to them in Money, that is to say, In *Gold-Dust*; and that they alone, should have full Liberty to go on Shore with it, and go whither they would, no Man whatever, but themselves, being allowed to set Foot on Shore in the same Place, *Distress excepted.* This they insisted on, because they had done some Things, which, if I would, I might have pursued some of them, for perhaps, to the Gallows; but that I promised to forgive them, and to enquire no more after it.

In a Word, There had been a Scuffle among 'em, in which one of their Canoes was overset, *as was said*, and one of their Number drowned, at

at the ſame Time when they loſt a great Part of their Gold; and ſome were thought to have done it maliciouſly too.

However, as I had no Occaſion to trouble them on that Score, not being upon the Spot when it was done; ſo having made this Capitulation with them, I performed it punctually, and ſet them all on Shore, with their Wealth, in the River of *Garonne* in *France*; Their Gold, their One hundred Pounds Reward for their Journey; their Wages, and their Share of Pearl, and other Advantages, made them very rich; for their Cargo, when caſt up on Shore, might, perhaps, amount to about Four hundred Pounds a Man: How they diſpoſed of themſelves, or their Money, I never gave myſelf the Trouble to enquire, and, if I had, 'tis none of my Buſineſs to give an Account of it here.

We diſmiſſed alſo, near Fourſcore more of our Men, afterwards, in a little Creek, which was at their own Requeſt; for moſt of them having been of the *Madagaſcar* Men, and, by Conſequence, Pyrates, they were willing to be eaſy, and I was as willing to make them ſo, and, therefore, cleared with as many of them as deſired it. But I return to our Ship.

Having thus made a long Capitulation with our Travellers, I took them all on Board, and had Leiſure enough to have a long Narration from them of their Voyage, and from which Account, I take the Liberty to recommend that Part of *America*, as the beſt, and moſt advantageous Part of the whole Globe

for

for an *English* Colony, the Climate, the Soil, and, above all, the eafy Communication with the Mountains of *Chili*, recommending it beyond any Place that I ever faw, or read of, as I fhall farther make appear by itfelf.

We had nothing now to do, but to make the beft of our Way for *England*, and fetting Sail from the Mouth of the River *Camerones*, fo the *Spaniards* call it, the Eighteenth of *January* in which, we had a more difficult and unpleafant Voyage, than in any other Part of our Way, chiefly becaufe, being a rich Ship, and not knowing how Affairs ftood in *Europe*, I kept to the Northward; as far as the Banks of *Newfoundland*, fteering thence to the Coaft of *Galitia*, where we touch'd, as above; after which, we went through the Channel, and arrived fafe in *Dunkirk*-Road, the Twelfth of *April*; and from thence gave private Notice of our good Fortune to our Merchants and Owners; Two of whom came over to us, and received at our Hands, fuch a Treafure, as gave them Reafon to be very well fatisfied with their Adventure: But, to my great Grief, my particular Friend, the Merchant, who put us upon all the Curiofity, and all the Difcovery you have heard of, was dead before our Return; which, if it had not happened, this New Scheme of a Trade round the World, had, perhaps, never been made Publick, till it had been put in Practice, by a Set of Merchants defigned to be concerned in it, from the *New Auftrian Netherlands*.

F I N I S.